

THE  
INTEREST  
OF  
IRELAND  
IN ITS  
TRADE and WEALTH  
STATE D.

---

P A R T II.

---

Proposing Expedients for *Ireland's* Relief against its Trade-obstructing and Wealth-consuming Maladies hinted in the first Part.

---

By *Richard Lawrence Esq;*

---

Dublin, Printed by *Jos. Ray, for Jo. North, Sam. Helsham, J. Howes, W. Winter and El. Dobson Booksellers.* 1682.

THE JOURNAL OF

## РЕДАКЦИИ

7

11

三

10

G. M. S. 10

卷之三

# THE ALPHABETICAL TABLE OF THE PRINCIPAL THINGS IN THE SECOND PART.

## A.

*The Act of Parliament of 17 Cat. 2.  
Ireland's Magna Charta, and why,  
p. 49, 50*

*Army of Ireland to be managed for the  
planting of the Countrey, and how, p. 97  
Army of Ireland, how it ought to be qual-  
ified, p. 114, 115*

*Aliens, why Protestants of England are to  
be so esteem'd to the peculiar Interest of  
Ireland, p. 115 to 122*

*Apostates first from Primitive Purity and  
Truth in Religion, who, p. 218 to 220  
Antichrist, who so esteem'd by Popish Au-  
thors, p. 206 to 221*

## B.

*Of Banks, p. 1, 2, 3, 4*

*Bankers, their Insolvency hath been a great  
damage to Ireland, p. 4*

*Bank, East-India, its Constitution, p. 7*

H

Bankers

## A Table to

Bankers great benefit by their united Stocks, p. 8

Banks prosperity depends on the Princes countenance, p. 9.

Banks universally useful to a Countrey low-  
ers, Interest, Exchange, and nurseth Ma-  
nufactories, p. 10, 11

Banks secure Peace, rescue Trade out of For-  
reigners hands, increase Shipping, Fist-  
ings, &c, p. 12, 13

Banks accommodate persons of all Ranks and  
Trades, p. 16, 17

Bank methods of managing, p. 37, 38

Bank Security is most visible solvent, and  
freest from trouble and hazard, p. 35

Babylon mystical, where, p. 220, 221

## C.

Corporation Trade the foundation of the  
great Trade of London, Amsterdam  
Venice, &c. p. 17

Corporation Trade raised the Hance-Towns  
of Germany, p. 18

Corporation Trade still enrich'd the place of  
its residence, p. 25

Governs the Trade of the Countrey, p. 32

Catalogue of Irelands chief Governors from  
ann. 1271 to 1680. p. 122 to 156

## the Second Part.

Coins, whether advisable to enhance their  
Value, or debase their Alloy in Ireland,  
p. 173 to 181

Princes Council of Trent, their Illegality, &c. p. 215  
to 217

Christians in Asia, Africa, &c. of the Pro-  
testant Faith, exceed the number of Pa-  
pists in Europe, p. 218

### D.

Divisions in Religion much obstruct the  
Trade and Wealth of Ireland, p. Q. R.

Dissenters ought to avoid being engaged in  
Factions of State, p. M. N. O.

Dissenters cannot rationally expect protec-  
tion from a Prince or State, to whom they  
will not give all security in their power  
for their Loyalty, p. L. M.

Dissenting Protestants not dangerous to the  
State of Ireland, though they were as ma-  
lignant against the Religion establish'd,  
as the Papists, p. I. K. L.

Doctrine of Devils, by whom taught, p. 221

### E.

Englands danger, if Ireland were possess'd  
by an enemy, especially by the French.

Englands just Title to what they possess of  
Ireland, p. 73 to 76

H 2 Eng.

England's Factions still weaken'd its Interest in Ireland, p. 75, 76

Establishment of Ireland, p. 156 to 162

Excommunication of Princes by Popes frequent, p. 233, 234

Errors in Nonconformity more dangerous than errors in Conformity, when, p. O.

Essentials in Worship agreed and maintained by Conforming and Nonconformity

Protestants, p. G.

F.

Fishing, how to increase, p. 13

Friars, their several Orders, whence, and why instituted, p. 212, 213

Fundamentals agreed to by Dissenters with the Church, p. G.

G.

Governors of Ireland unacquainted with the Country, not capable of well-managing its Affairs, and why, p. 102 to 107

This hath been the opinion and practice of our Kings from its first Conquest, of which, instances, p. 108, 109

In what cases excepted, p. 110, 111

I.

Ireland's English Interest potent above what it was before the last Rebellion, in

p. 47, 48

## the Second Part.

52. *eland's Interest in being Govern'd by its own Members*, p. 47 to 96  
es fr. *ish Papists, their interest in the potency of the English Interest in Ireland*, p. 73  
erou to 94

0. *gnorance in the Scripture the cause of Pa- main, pists Rebellion*, p. 91, 92  
misjudges and Furies of Ireland much more ingaged to suppress Sedition and Rebellion in Ireland, than those of England can be, and why, p. 105, 106  
and *suits, their inhumane bloody principles, from their own Authors*, p. 195 to 203  
vit *pists reflections and glosses on them*, p. 204 to 207  
*esuits, their Original and Characte*, p. 211

the to 214  
its *esuits, by what Authority their Order Instituted*, p. 214  
e *esuits banished, and their Tenents explod- ick, ded, by whom*, p. 222 to 225  
esuits, the natural consequence of their- *Principles*, p. 225

They abrogate the Laws of Humanity, Mo- rality and Divinity, p. 226

ve *their dexterity in fathering their Brats on innocent persons*, p. 227

re- *esuits, their suitable practices to their bloody*

## A Table of Contents

Bloody Principles, p. 231 to 240  
Jesuits employed by the Pope to destroy the  
Greek Church, p. 236  
Jesuits bloody work in the West and East  
Indies, p. 238

### L.

Lands of Ireland most possest by English  
Proprietors, p. 48  
Loyalty evidenced in many of the Irish Pa-  
pists, p. 89 to 203  
Lutherans and Calvinists in Germany  
more differ than English Protestants,  
yet esteem each other Protestants, and  
unite against Popery, p. H.  
Laws against single life useful in Ireland  
and why, p. A.B.C.

### M.

Massacre of Ireland, how inhumane and bar-  
barous, p. 81 to 87  
Militia of Ireland is its great Security, p. 98  
Militia neglected, the cause of the easi-  
massacring the naked Protestants 1641,  
p. 81  
Manufactories of Ireland, by whom incon-  
grued and erected, how ruined, p. 188 to  
191  
Mystical Babylon, who, in the opinion of  
Papists, p. 220

the Second Part.

N.

*Nobility or Peers of Ireland most English  
Protestants*, p. 63 to 67

*Nobility, their Catalogue, 1571, and 1641*,  
p. 67 to p. 73

*Non-residents enjoying Sallaries, a great  
loss to Ireland*, p. 99

O.

*The Original of most Noble and Worshipful  
English Families of Ireland were from  
Offices*, p. 96

*Ormond Duke, the longest Regency over  
Ireland, under the greatest difficulties,  
and why*, p. 112, 113

*Ormond, the great confusion he found Ire-  
land in at his access to the Government  
1662. and how soon composed*, p. 182 to  
188

P.

*Parliaments of Ireland altered in their  
Constitution, from an Irish to an English  
Interest*, p. 58 to 63

*A good Plea for Irish Papists against their  
Jesuited Priests that shall again insti-  
gate them to rebel*, p. 88

*Planting of Ireland discouraged by restraint  
of Trade, and being liable to be tried for*

## A Table to

capital Offences by Judges and Juries in  
England, to whom they are unknown, &c.  
p. 106

Poysonings and Stabbings the Popes argu-  
ments to convince gainsayers, instances,  
p. 228, 229

Principles of the Jesuits inconsistent with  
the just power and right of Princes,  
p. 240

### R.

Religion Protestant condemned as a veno-  
mous Doctrine, and Hellish Opinion by  
the Papists, p. 76

Religion Protestant, why no more received  
by Irish Papists, p. 90, 91

Rebellion and bloodiness of Popery above all  
other Religions in the World, whence,  
p. 193, 194

Rome can be no Mother-Church, nor Supe-  
rior to others, why, p. 218

Rome hath only the primacy of Apostacy  
from the principles of the Primitive  
Church, p. 218 to 222

Rome, &c. always promoted and encouraged  
the rebellions of Ireland, p. 76 to 85

Romes struggles with the Greek-Church for  
Supremacy, reduced them to Turkish  
Slavery, p. 237

Sta.

## the Second Part.

### S.

Statute Staple, its original use and method, p. 43 to 47

Souldiers, who are best for Field-Armies, p. 98, 99, to 120

The Statutes of the 10th. of Hen. 7. and 23d. of Hen. 8. no bar to persons born in Ireland from being Lord Lieutenant, &c. p. 100, 101.

Souldiers, 1000 bred in Ireland, worth 2000 bred in England for Irish Service, and why, p. 118

Subsidies of Ireland, their establishment, p. 164 to 173

Supremacy from the Pope, from whence, p. 208, 209

Supremacy, a Tallent so well improved by the Pope, that he deserves it, p. 234

Schism Criminal, when, p. D.E.

### T.

Trade of England ingrost by the Guild of the Hance, p. 18

Trade in Companies countenanc'd by the Kings and Parliaments of England since Edward the Third, p. 20

Trade to the East-Indies, when first obtain'd, p. 24

Trea-

## A Table to

Treasure, the vast summ Ireland hath cost  
England above what it was ever worth,

p. 53

Table reducing Plantation Acres into Eng-  
lish, p. 162, 163

Trade, why no more improv'd under the  
Government of the Justices and Duke of  
Ormond, p. 181

Tyrants are those Princes over their own  
Subjects whq are Slaves to the Pope,  
p. 235

Turkish Slavery of the Greek Church,  
the Product of the Popes Supremacy,  
p. 237

Trent Council illegal, &c. p. 217

## U.

Usher Bishop, his opinion declared it was  
the Interest of Irish Papists to support  
and strengthen the Interest of the Crown  
of England in Ireland, p. 77 to 81

Usher Bishop, Prophecies of the Irish Re-  
bellion 40 years before it was, and  
great trouble to the Protestants by the  
Papists yet to come, p. 80, 81

Vengeance of God dreadful on the Irish for  
their bloody Massacre 1641, p. 86, 87

Unity, though boasted of by Papists, yet at

the

## the Second Part.

they much more divided than Protestants, p. H. I.

Union of Papists chiefly in Errors and Immoralities,

Union in Religion, how far necessary amongst Protestants to promote the Prosperity, and secure the Peace of Ireland, p. C. D.

### W.

Weaving Broad-cloath, when first set up in England, p. 25

Wools first prohibited their transportation, p. 25

Wools may easily be prevented transporting, expedients proposed, p. 39 to 43

Wools transporting the ruine of our Clothing Trade, p. 39

Walled-Towns to be increased and well planned, to secure the safety of English Protestants in Ireland, p. A.

Women drunk with the blood of the Saints, Rev. 17. who, in the Papists opinion, p. 219, 221

### Y.

Guild of the Hance, its Antiquity and great Trade, p. 43

Their dissolution, and why, p. 34

Zeal

## A Table, &c.

### Z.

*Zeal preposterous, like Hell; hot, without light, that makes different Opinions different Religions, saith Bp. Bramhall pE.*  
*Zeal Popish and Jesuitical, that esteems all Separation Criminal Schism, ibid.*

---

## Books lately Printed.

**A Judgment of the Comet**, which became first generally visible to us in *Dublin, Decemb. the 13th. 1680.* By a person of Quality.

*Foxes and Firebrands*, or a Specimen of the Danger and Harmony of Popery and Separation: Wherein is prov'd, from undeniable matter of Fact and Reason, that Separation from the Church of *England* is, in the judgment of Papists, and by sad experience found, the most compendious way to introduce Popery, and ruine the Protestant Religion; in two Parts, Octau. by *R. W.*

*Interest of Ireland, &c.*

THE

THE  
SECOND PART  
OF  
IRELAND'S  
INTEREST, &c.

Proposing Expedients for *Ireland's* Relief against its Trade-obstructing, and Wealth-consuming Maladies hinted in the First Part.

---

C H A P. I.

Of Banks and Corporation Trade ; I joyn them together, not that it is necessary in Countreys qualified to manage them distinct ; but where Members and Stock is wanting, they are very consistent in the same hands, to be managed by the same united Stocks and Policies.

**B**anks are of divers kinds designed for several uses, but still aiming at the same end, which is gain either to the State, or particular Persons, together with such credit to their Bills, that

A a

they

they become current in all places, and to all persons where, and to whom assigned.

These Banks sometimes consist of particular persons, but usually Societies, as the Chamber of London, Banks of Amsterdam, and Venice, &c. Some of which chiefly designs Exchange, as Placentia in Italy, Lyons in France; others Usury, as Genoa, &c. others both for the publick and private benefit, in increasing Trade, securing and employing Orphans, Widows, and helpless people to money, &c.

\* p. 672.

*Bodin* \* observes, that in Florence, Siana, &c. they had their Banks nam'd Mounts of Piety, wherein he that would deposite any Sum at the Birth of a Daughter, should receive ten times so much, when they arriv'd at the age of eighteen years; where also Poor men might borrow Money upon Pawns at low interest, to prevent excessive Usuries, whereby the poor were opprest: and that Antonius Pius, and Servius, &c. delivered the publick Money in the Treasury to industrious men, to employ in Trade on Pawns, or other good security, whereby the Merchant gained by Traffick, and the publick Moneys increased by Interest; besides (saith he) a greater benefit did arise, the publick Treasure was preserv'd from the paws of Thieves, and Horse-leeches at the Court, and from being otherwise wasted by the Princes prodigality.

But I shall only treat of Banks, as they relate to Trade and Commerce, and become useful to others by accident.

Sometimes Banks are erected from the plenty of Money, in places not capable of Trade, or where persons are not willing to adventure in Trade, and so

so employ their Money at Usury, or Exchange, to foreign places, as *Genoa*, *Placentia*, and most of the Banks in *Italy*, which are the greatest and ancientest Banks in the World: *Heylin* observes the King of *Spain* was indebted to the Bank of *Genoa*, a Tun and a half of Gold at one time, and eighteen millions at another.

But since their case is not like to be *Irelands*, I shall only insist upon Banks, for the supply of the want of Money, which may properly be called a Land, or dry Bank, yet not wholly without Money; but like some Merchants, who with a small Stock, and large Credit, will drive a great Trade.

This sort of *Bank* must be founded upon undoubted visible Credit, that all persons who have Money to spare, may covet to lodge it there, rather than in any other place, having the knowledge of the *Solvent Capital* for their security; and the great Credit upon which the whole success of their Bank depends, it being with them as with some Merchants that are not so much concerned, to have twenty Bonds sued as one Bill of Exchange protested.

From whence it is, the Rich in *Holland* are as glad to get their Money secur'd in *Banks*, or *Can-tors*, as the Poor are to get their Children receiv'd into the Hospitals: which our observing Countreyman, Sir *William Temple* \* hath not omitted in his Observations: *Whosoever is admitted to bring in his Money, takes it for a great favour; and when they pay off any part of the Principal, those it belongs unto, receive it with tears.*

Nor will what is propoled be found difficult for persons in *Ireland*, of very obscure Capitals, might obtain credit both at home and abroad, for treble the Goods they take up; and how much more then may be done on the Credit of such a *Bank*, especially when we consider how many of our single *Bankers*, or *Exchangers* have fail'd within these few years, to the ruine of some, and weakening the Estates of others to this Kingdom, damage upwards of 50000 l. besides the scandal it hath brought on the credit of the Countrey, that no man knows who to trust, or where to lodge Money with security; these Bankrupts being as promising hopeful men as most they have left behind them. But since there is no security in *Ireland* can be so solvent, and satisfactory as Land-Security, other Stocks, though never so great, may be subject to decay, and the Creditor not discern it, as hath been too evident in some of the most creditable Companies, and chief *Bankers* in *London*: Yet a Land-security may be so settled by Law, as it cannot be weakned, in that it will not be in the power of the Bankers, in any case to alienate or incumber their Title in those Lands, otherwise than by Bank-credit, since all are personally and equally concerned therein. As for Example :

Suppose *Dublin* being the chief Seat of the grand *Bank*, and twenty persons shall secure to each other Lands of 200 Pounds *per. ann.* by Feofiment, or Statute-Staple, in trust on Defeasance for Bank-security; if any former Settlements, or Statutes be, they will soon be discerned, and there can be no colla-

collateral Incumbrance on that Security ; this will be a Security to a Bank of 4000 Pounds *per. ann.* Lands, being worth twelve years purchase, within ten miles of the City, which will raise a Bank-Security of 48 thousand Pounds.

And that no place or person might be depriv'd of the benefit hereof, every chief Port may likewise have their *Banks*, as Branches or Members of the *Principal Bank*, and take into their Company the neer adjacent places, and to hold a weekly correspondence with each other, and credit each others Bills, or Bank-tickets. Nor will such Banks restrain, or confine any man from the freedom of Trade ; for though none have the benefit of the Bank-credit, that hath not a Bank-security, yet shall they have liberty, if they desire it, to trade in Company with the Bankers, and have equal profit with them, proportionably to their respective Adventures ; and at the end of every voyage, liberty to withdraw or continue their Stocks, as they shall see cause, and chuse the place they will adventure unto, and the Commodities they will export, or import, or else left to trade by themselves, as they please : by which also all persons that either want knowledge in Trade, or scruple Usury, &c. may employ their Stocks, be they great or small, upon equal terms, with the Bankers, allowing only for Factorage, or provision towards the maintenance of the charge : And so in *Holland*, there is hardly a servant in a Merchants Family, but have their small Adventure in their Masters, by which way of Trade the States of *Holland* and *Venice* raised themselves.

from poor Fishermen, to the height and wealth they now are in : As I shall shew in my Treatise of Traffick, the great Trade which the World now flourisheth in, is but of yesterday : *Holland* and *England* were as low in Trade as *Ireland* is now, 100 years ago the *East* and *West-Indies* were unknown to them ; and although the *Spaniard* and *Portuguese* made a discovery of the *East-Indies*, *Anno 1417.* yet all the Trade we read of, were some *Negroes*, of which they sent the Pope a Present; for which, he in requital, gives them all they could discover in those *Indies*, which King *John* the 1st gives his Son, who discovered the Coast 100 leagues beyond *Cape de Verde*, and then farm'd to *Gomer*, on condition he should every year discover 100 leaguea more of the Coast ; and in the year 1460. erected their first Fort in the Isle of *Arguin*, and named it *Mina*, from the plenty of Gold that Countrey afforded ; but inconsiderable was their Trade for neer 100 years after, until the King and State espoused the Trade of the *Indies* on the publick account †.

† *Man-  
deſlos Tra-  
vels*, pag.

213.

Then the *Dutch* in the year 1595. having had some of their Natives employed in the *Spanish Indian* Fleets, inspected the Trade so far, as to report the advantage thereof to their Countreymen, upon which they sent three Ships, and so continued a small Trade on particular Merchants Adventurers to no great profit, until *Anno 1662.* the States observing the many different interests and humours of several particular Adventurers, would hazard the ruine of that hopeful Trade ; to prevent which, sent for

Part 2.  
wealth  
tise of  
now  
d and  
now,  
e un-  
t and  
, An-  
some  
t; for  
d dif-  
gives  
be-  
, on  
100  
460.  
and  
that  
heir  
and  
sub-  
had  
In-  
ort  
pon  
d a  
ers  
ob-  
of  
he  
nt  
or

for the Merchants, and prevail'd with them to incorporate under the States Conduct for 21 years, the Prince of Orange to be Governour \*. Since which, the Dutch East-Indian Trade hath flourisht to a prodigy.

\* *Man-  
deslos Tra-  
vels*, l. 3.  
p. 230.

The Constitution of this Dutch East-India Company is said to have in Bank six hundred thousand Pounds *Sterl.* of which *Amsterdam* hath one moiety, *Middleborough* a fourth part, *Rotterdam*, *Delph*, *Horn*, and *Enchusen*, each a sixth part; nor is there hardly a Nobleman, or Burgher in the Countrey, but hath some Stock in this Bank.

For the Government of this Trade, and the Interest of the Associates, they ordain a certain number of Administrators, of which *Amsterdam* chooseth twenty, *Middleborough* twelve, and each of the other Towns seven, and when any of these dye, the Chamber of the place names three, out of which the States General, or the Magistrates of the Town chooseth one; from which number, at the equipping of every Fleet for a Voyage, they elect a lesser number, to contrive and order the whole transaction of that Voyage: *Amsterdam* chooseth eight, *Delph* and *Rotterdam* two, *Middleborough* four, *Horn* and *Enchusen* two; and by this method they have managed the affairs of this Company about eighty years, and thereby are become the greatest Merchants in the World, and have obtained the Sovereignty over several Countreys in the East-India, and likewise secured to themselves a great part of the Portugals Trade in the Countreys of *Siam*, *Petam*, *Jeta*, *Beretan*, the Islands of *Amboyna*: be-

sides, this great Company, they manage a great Trade throughout the World, partly by single persons, but most by lesser Associations, whereby the common Interest of Trade is become the proper Interest of every particular person in the Countrey, their greatest Statesmen being their chiefest Merchants; so that there is no prejudice to any part of Trade, but all are equally interested and concern'd for relief; whereas in a scattered confused Trade, every man contrives his private profit, though the general Interest of Trade be ruined thereby. Much the same methods are observed by *Venice, Lisbon, &c.* and something like them by the *East-India, Levant, African, Eastland, &c.* Companies in *London*.

Nor will the Bankers be without their profit; for each man will enjoy the Rents and Profits of his own Lands, until the *Bank* fail with any of its Creditors, and then they extend what part of the Land they like, till paid, and the Proprietor must seek his reinedy from the *Bank*; for all their Tickets must bear the force of Bonds of the Staple against the whole *Bank*. Besides, the *Bank* enjoys the profit of the Interest paid for their Money, or Tickets, not exceeding one moyety of the current Interest of the Kingdom for their Tickets.

They will also enjoy the profit of Exchange, as likewise the profit of their Trade, which will be equal to others, at least; and the more profitable, in regard they will be enabled to trade in their own Ships, and on their own Credit, and buy at the

the best hand, and reserve their Goods for the best Market, without being streighten'd for Stock, or Credit ; and therewith likewise they will merit the favour of their Prince, the love of their Countrey, and increase the publick Revenue and Trade of the Countrey, employing and providing for the relief of the Poor.

In order whereunto, his Majesties Royal Stamp is requisite to secure them against all clamour or attempts on their Credit ; for it is not the greatest Credit they can attain unto, by their great Capital Prudence, or Honesty, that can preserve them, if they are not esteemed the darling of their Prince, and that he will refuse, upon any occasion, to make use of their *Bank* to the weakening its Security.

An Instance of which, we have of *Francis* the First, who ruined as well as raised the *Bank* of *Lions*, by dying so vastly in its Debt, that though all *Italy*, *Germany*, *France*, &c. tumbled in their Money for his life, yet they scraimbled it out as fast at his death.

For this reason part of the Oath of the Duke of *Venice* is, that neither Himself, nor any of his Ministers of State, upon any occasion or pretence whatsoever, shall at any time, nor on any occasion, meddle with the *Bank* ; and so great value hath the Great *Mogull* for the *Bank* of *Agria*, that He stiles Himself Protector of it; nor would the States of *Holland* have been so easily prevailed with, to exclude the Prince of *Orange* from future Command, contrary to

to the desires of the other States, in their Treaty of Peace with *England*, 1654. had they not retained a deep resentment of his Fathers menace put upon the Bank at *Amsterdam* about two years before, nor can his Majesty manifest his Grace and Favour more than in supporting so Sovereign and universal remedy against all the pecuniary and mercantile maladies of this impoverished Kingdom ; by which the Poor will be employed, the Rich supplied, and the Countrey planted, and civilized.

This Bank-credit will lower Interest ; for when its Bills and Tickets shall be as acceptable in payment either for Goods, or Debts ; and with less trouble and hazard transferred from one to another, than the best Money current : few will give ten *per cent.* for Money, when they can have Bank-credit for half that rate, which will also necessitate the Usurer either to purchase Land, and thereby raise the rate of it, or otherwise employ his Money in the Bank, or some other Trade ; who now preys upon the necessities of all persons, those of the best Quality not excluded, who cannot on their single Bond or Mortgage of Land raise Money without double Bonds-men, and they must be also Citizens, with a Warrant of Attorney for Judgment, besides the charge of procuration, &c. and Interest demanded before-hand, or half yearly, which is the highest Interest upon Interest, whereby the best landed, and most ingenious persons in the Kingdom are many times distressed, and are enslaved to the most griping Usuries which this Bank-credit will prevent, as also lower the Interest.

This

Part 2.  
e of  
ined a  
upon  
e, nor  
avour  
niver-  
an tile  
which  
, and  
when  
pay-  
lefs  
ther,  
e ten  
ank-  
itate  
reby  
oney  
reys  
best  
ngle  
out  
ens,  
sides  
man-  
selt  
ed,  
are  
ost  
re-  
his

Chap. 1. **of IRELAND.**

11

This *Bank*-Credit will lower Exchange to foreign parts, by increasing Traffick, and thereby altering the Balance of Trade, as is shewn in that Chapter, and remove all occasions of Exchange for Money at home; for Bank-Bills of 500*l.* will not weigh one ounce, but be safely conveyed from place to place by Post, or otherwise, without danger of robbing: for the Bank-method of paying their Bills must secure against all counterfeiting, or mis-applications; so that whosoever shall rob, or otherwise obtain Bills surreptitiously, can make no use of them: which method of safety being only the concern of the Bank, and not of the Creditors, I shall forbear to publish it.

By this *Bank* our Manufacturies will be propagated, this being the proper means for it, and in which we are now defective, which will hereby be provided against: For when there are Merchants at *Dublin* as there are at *London*, to buy with ready Money, the Manufactures of the Countrey will abound, for we neither want Materials, nor Artists, only Markets, which will be the main busines of this *Bank* to contrive; and having Shipping and Stock of their own, their Interest will prompt them unto it, since they can neither traffick into the *Levant*, nor *Baltick-Seas*, the two chief places for the Merchants of *Ireland* to inlarge their Trade unto, without woollen and worsted Manufacture, which now when made, cannot be disposed of.

The abuses in our woollen and worsted Manufactures, by which their value and credit is impaired, will be rectified; for they will not buy a piece but what

what is searched, and tried by persons of their own appointment, and place their own Seales as well as the Makers, upon every piece, which will bring our Manufacturies into credit in foreign Markets; and the like they will do for Leather, Butter, Tallow, Flesh, Fish, &c. the want of which is the ruine of the foreign Trade of *Ireland*, which is now under so ill repute beyond Sea, that *Irish* Goods, and Nought, are terms convertible.

Besides, in whatsoever they shall observe the Artists of *Ireland* defective, they can easily procure a supply, which will also put life into the Ingenious, and Industrious, when they can have *Bank*-credit for their Ware at any time, which will inable a poor Clothier, &c. with twenty Pound Stock, to do more than now with an hundred Pound, not knowing now what to do with Goods when made, which will employ the Poor, and by their labour double the value of Lands, and fill the Countrey with Money; as is shewed in the Chapter of Manufacture.

By which the Peace and Safety, as well as the Wealth of *Ireland*, will be increased; for whilst the poorer sort of people have nothing but a miserable life to lose, the Boggs and Rodes will be pestered with *Tories*; want increaseth discontent, and that puts men upon desperate ways for relief, which this *Bank* will prevent; for no man need to have in his House, or travel on the Rode with other than small Sums of that debast Money described in the Chapter of Coins, and yet have five hundred or a thousand Pounds worth of *Bank*-Tickets; which, as

was

was observed, would not be worth a Peny to the unlawful Possessor, and yet be as good as so much Silver or Gold current in their Houses, and much safer than other Specialties; which, if lost, he is in danger of losing his Money, but not so in this case, his Right appearing in the *Bank-Books*: And as it will prevent Robberies, so also discourage Rebels, since the Money passing current, is of small intrinsick value to them.

Besides, these *Banks* are the only means to rescue our Trade out of the Hands of Foreigners, and will wear out foreign Stocks, by which the greatest part of our foreign Traffick is now driven, to the enriching foreign Merchants, and beggering of our own: Foreigners having Money at low Interest, and gaining by their Exchange, they are able to undersell us in foreign Parts; so that our Merchants choose rather to be their Factors, than trade with their own Stocks; which is the reason we have so few wealthy Merchants, and those we have, after they have gained Estates by Trade, instead of increasing their Traffick, purchase Lands, and decline Trade.

This *Bank* will also be a means to fill the Kingdom with Shipping to manage the Trade thereof, which is at present the great gain of Foreigners; which will hereby redound to the benefit of this Kingdom, as in the Chapter of Shipping.

And hereby also we shall be capable of improving our Fishing upon the *Irish Coast* to the utmost: The great advantage of which, you may read in the Chapter of Fishing.

Not

Nor will it be difficult to satisfie persons, that this *Bank*-credit of paying or receiving Money will be as ready, and as safe as the ordinary way of paying and receiving Money in *Specia*, since with much ease these Bills may be transferred from one person to another ; and the trouble and labour of telling, weighing, and judging of the goodness or badness of Coins, and danger of miscounting hereby prevented.

In order whereunto, every person that either receives or pays Money in *Bank*, hath his account in the *Bank-book*, and at the desire of the Creditor, his Stock in *Bank*, either in part, or in whole, is transferred to the account of such other persons as himself shall assign. As for example ; A Clothier sells unto a Merchant or Draper an 100*l.* worth of Cloth, the buyer having Credit in *Bank*, assigns 100*l.* to the Seller ; the Book-keeper makes the Merchant Debtor, and gives the Clothier credit for so much again. The Clothier being indebted in whole, or in part of the said sum to the Woollman, the Clothier is made Debtor, and the Woollman Creditor : The Woollman being a Farmer, &c. owes the like sum to his Landlord for Rent, the Woollman is made Debtor, and his Landlord Creditor ; the Landlord is indebted, or hath occasion to buy Goods in Town ; the Landlord is made Debtor, and the said person is Creditor. If the persons to whom the Landlord was indebted be Retailers, that have occasion to buy Goods of the Merchant that first assigned in *Bank*, the Retailers have Goods, and the Account cleared without receiving

or

or paying a peny of Money. The which is also practicable in most other cases, and all these Assignments have the security of a *Bond* of the Staple, whereby not only the hazard and trouble of Money, (as before) but the hazard of disappointment, and the charge and delay of Law-suits is wholly prevented, and this is not only as to intire sums, but the 100*l.* may be as easily assigned to 20 persons with a little more trouble in writing, and will not only be useful in this case of Traffick, and prevent the hazard and charge many Merchants now undergo, by the ignorance or unfaithfulness of their Cashiers, but also accommodate other persons that have occasion to pay or receivs Money.

As for example ; A Gentleman having an Estate in several parts of the Kingdom, far distant from his dwelling, may order his Rents to be paid in the next adjacent *Bank*; and being there lodged, he may transinit it to any other *Bank* in the Kingdom, and then assign a Debtor or other person to receive it : And this sort of payment being all visible in *Bank*, will be a more certain Discharge or Acquittance than any other that can be given, and will wear all other Specialties much out of use, and prompt all men to choose *Bank*-Security before any other, where he may have his Money on Rebate at any time, before it's due.

Besides, this *Bank*-credit will be a conveniency, and great incouragement to young Merchants, who may be both ingenious, and industrious ; yet their small Stocks being lodged in Goods, which they cannot dispose, by reason the Market is cloyed, or other

other accidents ; whereas upon the security of these Goods, they may have Credit in *Bank* to keep up their Trade, and pay off such Debts out of the product of such Goods, as they can dispose of them to their best advantage.

Or, suppose a Clothier, Tanner, or Chandler, &c. have disburst their Stocks, in providing Cloath, Leather, or Tallow, and Markets fail at the season expected ; the charge of Ware-Houses, and Servants, &c. lye upon them, though they have no free Stock to keep them at work, are thereby eaten up ; but if they have this *Bank* to come unto, proportionable to the quantity of their Commodities, they are supplyed with Money, or Credit, to go on chearfully in their Callings.

Or it may happen, an honest and sufficient Man may be indebted upon a Statute or Judgment, and cannot raise the Money by the time limited, nor the Creditors occasions for his Money suffer him to forbear it, the Credit of one is preserved, and the Want of the other supplyed, without extremity of charge, and damage to either ; since the *Bank*, upon Security, answers the Money.

And besides the general benefit to the Kingdom by increasing Trade and Commerce, there will not be a person of the highest, or lowest Rank, but will find a conveniency and benefit by the *Bank*. A Nobleman of 10000*l. per ann.* may have occasion for 500, or 1000*l.* more or less, some short time before his Rent come in ; but without Mortgaging part of his Estate, and paying six months Interest, no man will trouble himself to pay and receive

Money.

Money, whereas if himself or any friend of his have Credit in Bank he is supply'd for what weeks or days he pleases.

And so a poor man, ingenious and industrious, could put himself into a way to maintain his Family comfortably, could he procure but a smal Sum of Money; if he goes to Pawn-brokers, it is ordinary with them to demand Six pence or Four pence a week for every Pound, which for a year is more than the Principal; whereas by the Bank Lumber he may be supplied (if not *gratis*, yet) at less than legal Interest; and by this the *Jews* and *Dutch* preserve themselves from Beggers; the feeblest amongst them, if not bed-rid, are put into a capacity to get their livelihoods, and for others Hospitals are provided.

Therefore let not this Bank Traffique be rejected, as an unpracticable notion; for it is beyond contradiction, that *England*, &c. have raised themselves from little to great Trade thereby, and so may *Ireland*, if not wanting to it self.

This expedient of *Banks* and *Company-trade* were the first foundation of the great Traffique of other Countries, flourishing in Trade, as *Venice*, *Florence*, *Belgia*, &c. where the very Constitutions of their Government are form'd principally for the promotion of *Trade*, their Princes and Nobles being their chief Merchants, and their Senates Councils of Trade.

And the Hans-Towns of *Germany* raised their Trade by this means, who were the first Corporation of Trade we read of, above sixty Towns

and Cities united their Stocks and Policies, of which *Lubeck*, *Brumswick*, *Danzick* and *Cullen* were the chief places of their Residence, and so great was their Trade and Credit under that Constitution, that all Princes granted them Priviledges, and they kept their Courts by their Deputies, and Councils, at *Bergen*, *Novagrade*, *Antwerpe* and *London*, where King *Henry 3.* granted them great Priviledges, and the *Still-yards* for their residence, which they enjoyed near 300 years; and managed their Trade by an Alderman and Council, &c. called the *Yeild of the Hans*, ingrossed the Trade of *England* for Grain, Cables, Mast, Pitch, Tar, &c. until, by their example, each Country learnt the knowledge of Trade themselves, and dismissed them.

And in the year 1551. being the 5. of *Edw. 6.* upon complaint of the *English* Merchants, their priviledges were seised into the Kings Hands, and the Trade ever since enjoyed by the Merchants of *London*, to the great enriching of that famous City.

And the best president I can lay before *Ireland* is *England*, who untill the Reign of *Hen. 3.* was as confused, and consequently as low in Trade, as *Ireland* is now, but hath been especially for these last 140 years, the most flourishing Kingdom in Trade in the world; and they must commence the rise and growth of their Trade from their beginning to trade by *united Stocks* and *Policies*, for which a Patent was first obtained by the Merchant Staplers from *Edw. 3.* from which time we find our Statute Books

Part 2.  
er, of  
Cullen  
and so  
r Con-  
ledges,  
es, and  
ve and  
n great  
lence,  
naged  
c. cal-  
rade of  
r, &c.  
nt the  
nissed

lw. 6.  
their  
, and  
hants  
mous

eland  
. was  
de, as  
these  
m in  
e the  
ning  
ich a  
plers  
ature  
ooks

## Chap. I. OF IRELAND.

19

Books crowded with excellent Laws for the encouraging and regulating Trade, which yet did not arrive to its height, and splendor, until about the beginning of the Reign of Queen Elizabeth, who did not only confirm what was done by her Predecessors, but augmented and greatly enlarged the Priviledges of that *ancient Company of Staplers*, and confirmed the Charter of the *Muscovy Company*, newly granted by *Philip and Mary*, and ordained in her time three new Corporations for Trade, which enlarged the Trade of *England* abundantly, viz. the *East-India*, the *Levant* and *Eastland Companies*, the Priviledges of all which have been confirmed and enlarged, with great respect, by all her Successors in Parliament; and His Majesty that now is hath added the *African and Canary Companies*; that if we had no other Arguinent, to prove united Stocks, and Policies in Trade, the great if not the only means to promote and increase Traffique and Commerce, the Examples of so many prudent Princes and States, and the Experience of the Kings and Parliaments of *England* for this 300 years past inight serve.

But I shall demonstrate by good reason, and unquestionable authority, when opposed, that this one expedient shall remove all the considerable impediments of Trade, in a short time, *dam up the current of much of our Expence upon Foreign Growth, shall reduce our confused Trade to a method, improve the native Growth of the Country to its height, as to Value at home, and Credit abroad, shall rescue our Trade managed by foreign Stocks into our own hands,*

B b 2

shall

shall increase His Majesties Revenue, and enable his Subjects of Ireland to farm it upon terms more to the Kings profit and conveniency, and the Kingdoms benefit and content, and to advance considerable Sums upon the Security of any Branch of His Majesties Revenue, when his Affairs shall require it.

And I will further undertake to demonstrate, that all other Expedients without this shall never attain these Ends ; let a Parliament pass all the Statutes of *England* for the incouragement of Trade in *Ireland*, it shall signifie no more than good Laws without Courts of Justice to execute them ; for though Interest prompts people to Industry, yet it neither qualifies nor governs them in right methods to attain their ends : A stragling Trade managed by particular persons, each striving to advance his private Interest, though to the ruine of the Trade in general, and obstructing it in other particulars, can no more make a Country flourish in Trade, than a stragling Army without Discipline and Order can preserve its peace.

But designing brevity, I shall only assert, that *Ireland* is now much more able to erect & govern such a Trade, than *England* was about 300 years ago, when *Ed. 1.* incourag'd it, and *Ed. 3.* established by Charter the *Company of Staplers*, or *Merchant Adventurers*, which was the *Mother Company* of *England*, and all it enjoy'd until *Philip and Mary* erected the *Muscovy Company*, yet that one *Company* removed the *Staple* from foreign parts to our own ports, and soon after the *Clothing Trade* from *Flanders*, whereby the Growth of *England*, especially the *Wools* were

Part 2.  
enable  
as more  
King-  
confi-  
of His  
re it.  
strate,  
ver at-  
e Sta-  
ade in  
Laws  
; for  
, yet  
t me-  
e ma-  
o ad-  
ne of  
other  
ish in  
pline  
  
Ire-  
such  
phen  
char-  
ven-  
and,  
the  
oved  
and  
ere-  
ools  
erc

were improved to 5 and 7, and in some cases (after the Worsted-trade of Stuffs and Stockings was attained) to ten times its value.

I am not unsensible that this Work will meet with opposition from some particular persons, whose private Interest may seem to be invaded by it; for so did that ancient and beneficial Company of Staplers in *England*, as a Monopoly intrenching upon the Liberty of the Subject, to the Parliaments in *Hen. 4.* *Hen. 7.* *Edw. 6.* and *Queen Maries* time, yet all parties being heard, those Complaints were quash'd, and the Priviledges of the Companies ratified and enlarged.

Yet again in *Queen Elizabeths* time, the importunity of the Clothiers prevailed against the Company but after a short tryal, the Clothing Countries were ruined, to that extremity, that in the 29th. of *Elizabeth* the Lords of the Council sent for the members of the Company, and desired them to resume their Priviledges, and cheerfully proceed in their Trade, and they should receive all possible countenance and assistance.

So in the Reign of King *James*, Alderman *Cocken of London, &c.* prevailed to have the Company dissolv'd, but after two years confusion, Trade so miserably languished, that the King published his Proclamation, *Anno 1617.* for the Restitution of the Company to its ancient Priviledges.

In like manner King *Charles the first* observing the decay of Trade, from the confusion intruding Interlopers brought upon it, publisht his Proclamation *Dec. 7. 1634.* *Whereas we have taken into our*

Princely consideration, the manifold Benifits that redound to this Kingdom, &c. and finding how much Government and Order will conduce to the increase and advancement of the same, We have thought fit, with the Advice of our Privy Council, to declare our Royal Pleasure herein, &c. and then positively and largely prohibits any to intrude upon the Companies Priviledge, upon pain of his high Displeasure, and of such Punishments as the Court of Star-Chamber, whom We especially charge with the Execution of our Royal Pleasure herein, shall think fit, to inflict, for such Contempts. After this, the 11th. of March 1643. both Houses past an Ordinance, intituled, For the Upholding of the Government of the Fellowship of Merchant Adventurers of England, &c. near to the same effect as His Majesties Proclamation before recited.

And as Corporation Traffique hath procured all the flourishing Trade England now enjoys, so the Portugals, Dutch, &c. have thereby altered the whole course of Trade that Venice had with India, Arabia and Persia; Venice, being the ancient Mart for the Commodities of those Countries, now buy of us; so the English Levant Company hath wrested the India Trade from the Turks, and now sell where Venice used to buy. And that which gives England and Ireland the advantage in Traffique is, the staple Commodities they sell necessary for Life; as Flesh, Fish, &c. for the Belly, Cloth, Stuffs, &c. for the Back; that in most Countries England trades with, they wear Englands Woollen Livery, eat in English Pewter, Seasons and

art 2.  
at re-  
much  
crease  
ought  
to de-  
n po-  
upon  
high  
Court  
with  
shall  
this,  
st an  
Go-  
nu-  
t as  
d all  
the  
the  
with  
an-  
oun-  
om-  
yks,  
that  
e in  
ne-  
lly,  
ost  
nds  
ons  
and

## Chap. 2. of IRELAND.

23

and Sauce with *Englands* Indian Spices, shod with English Leather; there is no Clothing in *Spain* esteemed like the English Bayse and Stuffs, nor no Food exceeds the English Herring and Pilcher: *sweden*, *Denmark*, and all those cold Northeast Countries within the *Sound*, to the bottom of the *Baltick*, keep themselves warm by English woollen Cloth; and all this obtained by vertue of *Englands* Trade by united Stoks and Policy. For in little above 100 years *Europe* was so far from trading with the *East* and *West Indies*, the *West* were unheard of, as I shew in my Treatise of *Traffique*; and the *East* unknown otherwise than by report to our Mariners and Merchants: *Italian* and *Spanish* Merchants were esteemed great Adventurers, until the *Turkie* and *East India* Companies were incorporated by Queen *Elizabeth*, who God made instrumental, not only to reform Religion, but to regulate and advance Trade: *Englands* and *Hollands* true Religion and potent Trade came together, God grant they never go together, it is worthy our observation, how the mighty flourishing Monarchy of *Spain*, since *Charles* the 5. and his Son *Philip* the 2. hath dwindled away, and decayed in Fame and Potency since they erected their barbarous Inquisition, which banished their Trade and Wealth to *England* and *Holland*; that *Antwerpe* and *Sevils* Ebb tide in Trade hath made it full Sea at *London* and *Amster-dam*; and as *England* and *Holland* hath gained their Trade and Wealth by being Receptacles and Shelters of persecuted Protestants; so will the contrary lose it: the *Italians* have a proverb, *He that would*

improve Italy must destroy Milan, that is, disperse the multitude of Artists there settled to the other Cities that want them, which nothing so naturally effects, as Persecution. Let them beware they lose it not by persecuting them, and driving them away. The vast Trade *Spain* had ingrossed both in the *East* and *West Indies*, and in *Africa* they might yet have enjoyed, had not cruel *de Alva*, by his inhumane severities, forced the *Dutch* to cast off the *Spanish* iron Yoke, and defend their Liberties; whereby, as Sir *William Temple* observes, by the great multitudes of people crowded together in a narrow compass of Land, they were necessitated to improve their Industry at Sea; and after the *Spaniards* and *Portugals*, who were then the Subjects of *Spain*, had entirely enjoyed the enriching Trade of the *East Indies*, &c. as before, for almost one hundred years, viz. from *Anno 1498.* until 1595. the *Dutch* sent a Fleet from *Amsterdam*; and then in 1600. the *English* sent four Ships, viz. the *Assention*, the *Dragon*, the *Hector* and *Susan*, under the Command of Captain *Lancaster*, since which, by the prudent Government of that Company, hath equalized the *Portugues* and *Dutch*, having erected Plantations and Factories at *Ormus*, &c. in *Persia*, at *Agria*, *Cambasan*, *Surat*, &c. in the *Moguls Country* at *Mun*, *Salupan*, *Ar-magon*, *Pecana*, *Siam*, on the Coast of *Chorman-del* the Isles of *Sumatra*, *Bantam*, &c. that now they furnish *Italy* and *Turkie* with all those Indian Commodities, which about fifty years ago they bought there, to the ruine of the Trade of *Syria* and

part 2.  
spense  
other  
urally  
they  
them  
both  
night  
y his  
st off  
ties;  
y the  
in a  
rated  
the  
Sub-  
hing  
most  
until  
am;  
vz.  
san,  
nce  
om-  
ch,  
Or-  
at,  
Ar-  
an-  
ow  
ian  
ney  
ria  
nd

## Chap. I. OF IRELAND.

25

and Egypt, &c. who have now only an Inland Trade by Caravans from *Aleppo*, *Damasco* and *Meeha*, &c. And out of the Ashes of their *Barbary* Company, ruined by the Civil Wars of *Fez*, arose the *Levant* or *Turkie*, the most flourishing and beneficial, Company now in *England*, incorporated by King *James*.

I do but hint these things here to evidence the undoubted advantage of Company Trade, insisting largely upon them in my Treatise of Traffique, in the Chapter of Discoveries of new Trades.

And that this way of Corporation-Trade has not only greatly enlarged Trade, but enriched the places of its Residence, we have manifold instances; the ancient Company of Merchant-Adventurers, now called the *Hamborough* Company, erected by *Edward* the first, in 1296. was courted by the Duke of *Brabant*, to make their Residence at *Antwerpe*, where they first settled the *English* Staple, and had granted to them great Priviledges, and made the City flourish in Trade; which being observed by that inspectionious Prince *Edward* the third, he, to bring the Trade to his own Ports, prohibited the Transportation of Wools, and granted great encouragement to Dutch Weavers to set up their Craft in *England*, and soon after prohibited all foreign Cloth from being transported into the Realm, confirmed by *Edward* the Fourth, who settled their Priviledges by Charter in the year 1406. which hath been confirmed and enlarged by all his Successors.

Queen

Queen *Elizabeth*, for the better vending their Cloths, when their Quantity exceeded home Markets, gave them power under the Great Seal to treat with foreign Princes and States for places to settle the Residence of their Factors, and Stores; upon which all the Princes and States in *Flanders*, *Holland* and *Germany* strove who should enjoy them; and wheresoever they removed, they drew a vast Trade after them: their present Residence is at *Dortrech* for the *Netherlands*, and *Hamborough* for *Germany*, where the chief Court of their Fellowship now resides: they transport all sorts of Cloths dressed and dyed, Lead, Tin, Oyl, Stockens, Hats, *Spanish* Fruits, and Wines; and make their returns in Linnings, *Rhenish* Wines, Mather, Hops, Sope, Wire, Copper, Bras, Iron, Steel, Quick-silver, Gunpowder, Flax, Hemp, Allom, Wax, &c. This Company hath power, by their Charter, yearly to elect a Governour, Deputy Governour, and Assistants, and to settle their Residents & Courts in any parts beyond Sea, and several places in *England*, as *London*, *York*, *Hull*, *Newcastle*, &c. with power of making Acts and Ordinances (so as they are not repugnant to the Law of *England*) for the better Government of their Trade, likewise power to hear and decide Causes, to implead, fine and punish Offenders.

This grew to be the most flourishing Company for Trade in the world, until *Philip* and *Mary* erected the *Muscovy* Company, which soon wrested a great part of their Trade from them, which were at first called the Corporation for Discovery of new Trades,

Trades, (a Design that would well sute with the present state of *Ireland*) whose great Priviledges were confirmed and enlarged, as before, by Queen *Elizabeth*, much after the method of the other, and their Trade much the same: and after this studious Princeſs, for the Improvement of the Trade and Wealth of her Country, added to these, ſhe found the three other Companies beforementioned, viz. the *Levant* or *Turkie* Company, which made the firſt Discovery of that vast Trade, ſince driven in the Signorie of *Venice*, and the Dominions of the *Grand Seignior*; and thereby obſerved the vast Trade betwixt *Aleppo* and other *Levant* Ports with the *East Indies*, managed by Land carriage, which encouraged them to enquire into a more cheap and gainful way to obtain *East India* Conimodities, at firſt Hand.

And that produc'd that moſt famous Country-intiching Company, called the *East India* Company, who obtain'd a Charter for great Priviledges from the Queen, and hath managed their Trade by a joint Stock, reported to be 600000 l. whereby they have built and maintained a gallnt Fleet of ſtately Ships for War as well as Burthen, employed multitudes of people in their Plantations, Ships and Factories, to the great Honour and Wealth of their Country.

And after this, in the 21. year of the Reign of that moſt famous Queen, that is, in the year 1579. did ſhe incorporate the *Eastland* Company, and endow them with great Priviledges and Immunities, to trade in *Denmark*, *Sweden*, *Poland*, *Prusia* and

and Pomerland, from the River *Odera* Eastward.

And it is worth observing how small beginnings in Trade beget great increase; Trade, like that Grain of Mustard-seed our Saviour speaks of, being cast into the ground, grows up to a great tree, that the Fowls of the air may lodge in the Branches of it; and it is also observable, if foreign Traffique did live, yet it never flourished in this part of the world, until it was managed by united Stocks and Policies, as in the forementioned instances in our own Country, besides what is of the same kind amongst all our Neighbours flourishing in Trade.

And as in these many examples from past times evidence that they esteemed this way of Traffique the only way to increase Trade, so is their Wisdom approv'd and confirm'd by the prudent in this age, His Majesty that now is hath set to his Seal, that Corporation-trade is the strength of foreign Traffique, by his not only confirming what his Royal Predecessors before did, but also by his adding the *African* and *Canary* Companies; the first not only endowed with priviledge, that sounds like Prince-ly Prerogatives; as power of Peace and War, raising Forts, building and equipping Ships of War, &c. to appoint Governors, to constitute Laws, &c. and dignified with the title of the *Royal Company*; and well they may, when *His Royal Highness* hath bore Office, and the chief Princes and Nobles of England enrolled Members, as Prince *Rupert*, Duke of *Buckingham*, Duke of *Albemarle*, Earl of *Peterborough*, *St. Albans*, *Sandwich*, *Bath*, *Arlington*, *Shaftsbury*, &c. and the Territories of this Royal Company is

is from *Sally in South Barbary* to *Cape de Bona Esperanza*, a Princely Dominion. And having thus briefly hinted, how the Wisdom and Experience of past ages, and many Nations have set to their Seals, to the rationality & peculiar advantage to this way of improving Trade by united Stocks & Policies. I shall hint some inconveniences attending its omission.

First, the want of settled Correspondency for want of Intelligence is the ruine of Trade; for when men grope out a Trade, as blind folk do their way, they stumble at many a stone, and run their heads against many posts which light would prevent.

And few single persons, at least in *Ireland*, are able to carry on such a Trade as will maintain Servants, or Factors, to inform them how the Rates of Goods rule at the several parts they trade with, but must depend upon the Advice of such persons upon the place, whose Interest it is to encourage their Principles to confine to them, let Goods turn to Profit or Loss, they will deduct their Provision, &c. which contracts much perplexity and confusion in Trade; whereas Trade in Company, managed with united Stocks, prevents them, being able to bear the charge of able Factors in the Country they trade unto; and able to bear a considerable loss, which would ruine a particular person, able to keep their Goods when Markets are low, till they rise, able to ingross the Bulk of a Commodity when brought low by unadvised clogging of Markets, and thereby raise Rates; for by their well governed Correspondency they are inform'd not only what Rates Goods go at, but

but what quantity of them are in the Stores, at each foreign port, and what time they will probably take for consumption, what kind of Vintage or Crops is in the Countries producing them, &c. and by these views can discourage their increase at home, until their Markets mend abroad, that they may make their Commodities pay Interest for their lying; and without these and the like expedients, no man can secure a Trade to turn to any certain Account; but as a meer Lottery, some Voyage brings a prize, and some a blank; whereby men of small Stocks are oft times undone, and the best perplex'd and discouraged.

Secondly, This Trade in Company with a considerable united Stock, will preserve a Trade from ruine by Interlopers, that will be nibbling at Traflique they understand not; as Pedlars at Land, so these at Sea, perplex and ruine the Trade of skilful able Merchant, and do themselves no good: for, as Pedlers may undersell the ablest Shopkeepers in some small Wares, by living after a beggerly vagrant way, paying no Rents, nor bearing no charge in their Country, and maintaining themselves by conditioning where they sell small Markets to have Victuals, &c. into the bargain; so these Sea-pedlers much after the same manner maintain themselves, and thereby are able to undersell the Merchants, who have great Families to maintain at home, besides chargeable Factors abroad, great Duties to pay to the King, chargeable Offices to bear in their Cities, &c. and if the Merchants shall have no more priviledge from the State than the

Interloper, he will be discouraged, &c. and the Trade of the Country ruined from these and the like inconveniences, &c. which I have observed to attend the Trade of *Ireland*, by the small Trade I have driven there my self.

1. In the Trade of Wools, one of the chief Commodities of the Country, greatly damnified, their Wools sometimes vended at half their value, near to the undoing of the Sheep-master, &c.

Proceeding principally from the abuse of Trade by Interlopers: for, although Wools must rise and fall with the Manufactures of *England*, where they are chiefly vended, yet as the principle Clothiers of *England* will store up their Cloths and Stuffs when Markets fail, until they can sell them to profit; so should the principle Sheep-masters reserve their Wools, and the Wool-Merchants store up poor mens small parcels until Trade mend, and then not tumble over great quantities, to clog and lower Markets; but to feed Markets as they observe their Trade requires; by which means the Wools of *Ireland* were kept up to a competent Rate for 7 years together by my self, as both the Sheep-masters and Skinners in the Province of *Leinster* and *Connacht* have often owned to me.

2. So for Tallow, and Butter, &c. trading in them becomes a Lottery from the same cause, as my self experienced several times, and particularly in the year 1670. having occasion to buy a considerable quanthy, I agreed for several Tuns at 24. and it fell, I bought more at 23. it still fell, to 22. and in some parts of the Kingdom 21. I marvelled at it, my Intelli-

Intelligence giving no advice that any great quantities were in the Merchants hands, either at *London* or in foreign Markets, but bore a competent rate, only low in the West of *England*; I suspected it only proceeded from our Blind man buff Merchants clogging the Market; I stopt shiping my own, and presently bought up all I could in *Dublin* at price current, and writ to my Correspondents and Factors in all parts of *Ireland*, to do the same upon my account; upon which the Price presently started, and rise to 24 and 25. and so held it that season.

By which Experience in these and several other Commodities, I observed the Trade of *Ireland* was ruined by disorder; and was preservable, and capable of Improvement, if rightly managed by considerable Stocks, either in single hands, conducted by the prudence of an experienced Merchant, or in Company, by a prudent Governor and Court of Assistance, according to the patterns of the aforementioned Companies of *England*, &c.

3. This is the only Expedient to rescue the Government of our Trade out of the hands of foreigners, at whose mercy we are, whether we shall have a high or a low Rate for our Native commodities; for they that command the largest Capital, or Stock of a Kingdom or State, will rule and govern the Trade of it, and set the Rates on all Commodities exported or imported.

*Object.* *Englands* Trade is divided into Companies, which you have named, as *Hamborough*, *Muscovy*, *Levant*, *East India*, &c. and would you propose

art 2.  
quan-  
ondon  
rate,  
it on-  
hants  
and  
price  
d Fa-  
upon  
ently  
that  
other  
land  
, and  
d by  
con-  
Mer-  
and  
f the  
Go-  
sign-  
have  
ies;  
ock  
the  
ties  
in-  
ugh,  
you  
ose

propose all the Trade of *Ireland* to be contained in the circuit of one Company?

*Answ.* Though the great Trade of *England* and *Holland*, &c. may well bear and fully employ several Companies with joint stock, &c. yet the Trade of *Ireland* will not; *England* began with one Corporation for Trade in *Edw.* the thirds time, and erected no more until *Philip and Mary*, who granted their Patent for the *Muscovy Company*, which was upwards of 200 years: for Trades as well as Pastures may be overstock'd, and thereby starved; for no Trade thrives where the Merchant grows not rich, as well as the Country benefited, and as the best of Trades may be made bad by too many of the same Faculty in one City; so the best expedient for Foreign traffique may be rendred unsuccessful by erecting more Corporations than the commerce of the Country will bear: for Traffique like Water runs with the deepest and strongest current, when it is by banks reduc'd to a narrower channel; and when it begins with *Nilus* to overflow its banks it is time enough to increase its channels; as I shew in the Chapter of the Progress of Trade: and from hence it was, after *London* began to gain a further inspection into Foreign traffique, they grew so soon weary of the Yeild of the *Hance*, which from the time of our *Henr. 3.* to *Philip and Mary* were not only permitted, but courted and encouraged in their Commerce with us, enjoying great Priviledges and paying small Duties; from which time their Customs were enhanced from one to twenty per Cent. the *Hance* not only complain'd, but clamour'd

aloud, for breach of their ancient Priviledges confirmed unto them by long prescription, from thirteen successive Kings of *England*, the which they pretended to have purchased with their Money: King *Philip* undertook to accommodate the busines, but *Queen Mary* dying, and he retiring, nothing was effected; complaints being afterwards made to *Queen Elizabeth*, she answered, that as she would not innovate any thing, so she would protect them still in the immunitiess and condition she found them; hereupon their Navigation and Traffique was suspended a while, which proved very advantagious to the *English* Merchants; for upon this they tryed what they could do themselves herein; and their Adventures and Returns proving succelsful, they took the whole Trade into their own hands.

This so nettled the *Hance*, that they devised all the ways that a discontented people could to draw upon our *Staplers* the ill opinion of other Nations and States; but that proving of too small a force to stop the current of so strong a Trade as they had got footing into, though they applied themselves to the Emperor, as being a Body incorporated to the Empire, and upon complaint obtained Ambassadors to the *Queen*, to mediate the busines, but they returned still *re-infecta*: hereupon the *Queen* caused a Proclamation to be published, that the Merchants of the *Hance* should be treated and used as all other Strangers within her Dominions in point of Commerce, without any mark of distinction; which they so ill resented, they quit the Country;

try; and so ended the Yeild of the *Hance*, after 200 years flourishing.

*Obj.* Is there not a great hazard in this affair to the principle Bankers in the mismanagement of it, either for want of skill, care or fidelity in its ministerial Officers? &c.

*Answe.* There is no humane affair but is subject to injury; a Prince runs some hazard in the choice of his Counsellors, and a State in the election of their Senators, and since there proceed no Angels from *Adam*, the best of men will be subject to err.

But this constitution of Corporation trade is as capable of a solvant rational security, as is in the power of man to devise; and to that height, we never heard nor read it ever failed any Undertakers these 400 years in *England*, or elsewhere; but on the contrary, as it hath raised many Principalities and States, as is before observed, from poor and low condition to great wealth and potency, so many particular Families hath it raised from low and mean, to worshipful and honourable Ranks; for the method of managing this Society gives so clear and full an inspection into its constant state, that each of its principle Creditors may inform himself at pleasure by the Comptrollers Books, whether its Capital decays or increaseth, and what profit or loss the Return of every Ship at the end of her Voyage produceth: besides at every Quarter Assembly the Governours, &c. are to give an account of the whole Transaction since the last Assembly, and themselves receive an account every month of the

proceed of the Officers, and how they observe the Instructions and Institutions of the general Assembly, which are always recorded in the Office.

Then the general Assembly of the original Bankers, &c. at their annual Meetings have the whole transaction of the year past, with its product presented to them fairly ingrossed by the Register, of which as many of them as desire it may have Copies, and at the same Meeting they elect their Governor, his Deputy and Counsel of Assistants for the ensuing year, and regulate what they find deficient in the last years Transactions; and make a new Establishment for the ensuing years Proceed, from which the Governor, &c. must not vary, without first summoning a general Assembly, and proposing the matter to them; at which Assembly the Dividend is to be made of the past years Profit, which every man may either receive, or otherwise have it added to his Capital in Bank, and so increase his Stock there.

So that upon the whole, the Stock in Bank is never out of the owners possession, nor view, but lieth as ready and as visible as his Cash in his own coffer.

And although the original Bankers cannot withdraw their Stock, to the weakening of the grand Capital, yet they may assign it to others, which the Company will be obliged to accept; or otherwise give the same Rate others offer for the Interest; so that a Stock in Bank will not be subject to so much hazard as in a Merchants own hands,

hands, unanaged by his own Factors or Servants, or in a Gentleman's hand managed by his Steward, &c. in regard few persons are capable of keeping a dayly check upon their private concerns, either in respect of capacity, or time to perform it. Thus having not only proposed the erecting a Corporation, who by united Stocks and Councils will propagate and improve the Trade and Wealth of *Ireland*, but also strengthened my Proposition with Examples of all Kingdoms and States flourishing in Trade, who have greatly increased their Trade and Wealth thereby, and answered such Objections as I conjectured might arise against it, I shall only speak of its Method, and submit the whole to the consideration of the publick spirited Judicious.

*Object.* If we were informed at least something of the Method of managing this Bank, it might further give satisfaction.

*Answ.* The Method for managing this Bank, &c. to be settled by common consent of the original Bankers, according to the Rules of the *English* or *Dutch East India* Companies, or such other Method as they shall agree upon.

1. That the Persons to manage this Affair, viz. the Governor, Deputy and Council of Assistants be annually chosen by the original Bankers, who shall be enjoyned to observe such Rules and Methods as shall be given them from time to time, and the said Governor and Deputy, &c. to propose, and the general Assembly to approve of their Register, Treasurer, &c.

2. That the Trade & Commerce of this Society be prescribed by the major part of its Members at their annual Councils, at which time the Governor, &c. are to give an account of their whole Transactions for the time past, and to propose to the general Assembly what they shall think fit to be then considered, for the Proceed of the Company the ensuing year.

3. That a known place be provided near the Exchange, and the Office to be open from nine to twelve in the forenoon, and from three to six in the afternoon, and as business increaseth so the time to be enlarged.

4. That a Bank Lumber be erected, to supply the occasions of the poorer sort with small sums of Money upon Pawns at reasonable rates.

5. That the whole Constitution of the Bank, and Corporation with its Priviledges and Securities, be confirmed by Act of Parliament.

6. For the mutual Security not only against each other, but also betwixt the Bank and all persons it shall give or receive Credit from; that they do agree, that all their Bills and Tickets do bear the force of Bonds of the Staple, by prevailing with the City of *Dublin*, &c. until a Parliament meet: that the Governor of this Society to be still chosen Mayor of the Staple, the profit of all Statutes acknowledge for Debt, not relating to the Bank-trade, to be still entred in the City Book, and paid to the City Treasurer, or whom they shall appoint to receive it; as also all their Entries and Certificates to bear the Credit of a Publick Notary, by swearing

Part. 2.  
society  
ers at  
ernor,  
Trans-  
e ge-  
e then  
y the  
ar the  
pe to  
n the  
time  
upply  
ns of  
ank,  
ties,  
ainst  
per-  
hey  
the  
the  
hat  
sen  
ac-  
ank-  
aid  
int  
ifi-  
by  
ng

swearing one Clerke of the Office in that capacity, which will strengthen the credit of their Security, and facilitate all their transactions.

Besides, this Affair, upon the Foundation of the Law of the Staple, will give a legal stamp until the Kings Patent be obtained, and a Parliament of *Ireland* meet to enact the same. It may be serviceable to both Kingdoms, in executing the Laws against Transporting our *Irish* Wools into Foreign parts, which hath been the bane of the Clothing Trade of *England* as well as *Ireland*; for by the advantage of our *Irish* Wools both *France* and the *Low Countries* have been able to work up their own Wools to the height of our *English* Staple, which otherwise they were not capable of; for as the Wools of *Spain*, and the more southerly parts of *France*, are too tender and fine for strong, thick Cloth, so the Northerly Wools are too course and harsh to produce it; but mixing our Wools with either, they produce Cloth of what sort they please; by which advantage the great Trade for Woollen Manufacture of the *Hamborough*, *Eastland* and *Muscovy* Companies are much damnified, who vended the greatest proportion of our Northern course and middle Cloths, &c. *Poland*, *Silesia*, &c. having not only much increased the number of their Sheep, but improved the Staple of their Wools of late years, and encouraged great numbers of the *English* Weavers, &c. to settle amongst them; besides the Prince Elector *Palatine* hath carried over into his Country many thousands of *English* Families, all Artists in the Woollen Manufacture, within these

twenty years: But if the transporting of our Irish Wools could be prevented, it would put a violent check to their progress, for which we have good and severe Laws, only want persons interested to prosecute and execute them; and it would be the interest of this Corporation, to use their utmost diligence therein, both in order to increase their own Manufactures for the supply of their Exportations, and discourage foreign Manufactures to preserve their Market. And as it would be much their Interest, so will they be in a capacity to effect it above any other Judicatures, by the advantage of their Factors and Correspondents in all Ports, who will easily discover all attempts of that kind, especially having the Authority and observing the method of the Staple, which,

1. Limits the Transportation of staple Commodities to certain known publick places, to be bought and sold, as *Newcastle upon Tine*, *York*, *Lincolne*, *Norwich*, *Westminster*, *Canterbury*, *Chichester*, *Winchester*, *Exeter* and *Bristol*; in *Ireland*, at *Dublin*, *Waterford*, *Drogheda* and *Cork*; and for *Wales*, *Carmarthen*, where all Wools, Wool Fells, Leather, Led, &c. were to be brought, and weighed at the Kings Beam, and every Sack or Bag of Wool to be sealed by the Mayor of the Staple, &c.

2. As they are by the said Act confined to places for Markets, so to Ports for Shipping; as for *York* at *Hull*, *Lincoln* at *Boston*, *Norwich* at *Tarmouth*, *Westminster* at *London*, *Canterbury* at

Part. 2.  
Irish  
violent  
good  
ted to  
be the  
utmost  
their

Ex-  
tutes  
ld be  
capa-  
, by  
pon-  
r all  
Au-  
ple,

om-  
to  
ue,  
ter-  
Bri-

be-  
ere  
ere  
n,  
by  
to

;  
th  
y  
t

## Chap. I. OF IRELAND.

41

*Sandwich, Winchester at Southampton, to be again weighed at the Ports before the Customers; and an Indenture signed betwixt the Mayor of the Staple and the Customers; all which, with the Weight and Custom paid, to be expres'd in the Cocket at that time; every Sack of Wool paid six shillings eight pence, two hundred Wool Fells twenty shillings, a Last of Leather thirteen shillings four pence, and every Sow of Lead three pence; Foreigners paid a third more besides the Merchant, to take an Oath before the Mayor of the Staple, &c. that they should hold no Staple beyond the Sea of the same Commodities according to the 27th. of Edward the Third, Chap. I. State Staple.* Now if our Ancestors found reason to keep this methodical Check upon the Transportation of Wools only, to preserve the Kings small Duty, before *England* attained the Woollen Manufacture, much more ought there now to be a stricter Check observed, when not only the Kings great Duty, but Manufacture, which is the Wealth and Glory of the Country, depends upon it.

And for *Ireland*, the Staple being confined to the four Ports beforementioned, all upon the *English* Sea, both for Markets and Shiping, if it were now observed with these following Rules added, they could never wrong us of a Bag of Wool.

1. That as our Ports are prescribed, so the Markets of the Staple appointed, as before observed in *England*,

*England*, and every Town prescribed its Port to ship, that the Staplers at every such Market should maintain a sworn Weigher, who should certifie to the Staple Port the Quantity and Quality of the Wool then weighed, and to whom sold.

2. That no person be permitted to buy or sell Wools, &c. but a Brother of the Yeild of the Staple, who upon their Freedom are sworn not to transgres its Laws: If Foreigners, to give Security to observe the Staple Rules.

3. That no Ship be permitted to transport Wool, that do not belong either to the Port where it was taken in, or the Port in *England* it is consign'd to.

4. That no Security be accepted, but known substantial Inhabitants of the Port the Goods are ship'd from.

5. That the Clerk of the Licenses register every License, and issue no more to that person, until he bring a Certificate or a Copy of the Cocket from the Custom-house, of the due shiping of the former to be fil'd.

That the Certificate of its true landing be returned in six months after the date of the Cocket to the Customer, and he to send a Copy of it to the Clerk of the Licenses, or otherwise the Bonds be deliver'd to the Mayor of the Staple to be put in suit.

These Rules being observed, I dare undertake to answer for every pound of Wool wrong transported, and without some such Expedient, the Manufactures of *England* as well as *Ireland* will be ruined by the Transportation of *Irish* Wools to foreign Markets.

This

Part 2.  
ort to  
should  
sifie to  
of the  
or sell  
of the  
not to  
curri-  
sport  
here  
gn'd  
own  
are  
ever-  
until  
rom  
mer  
re-  
to  
the  
be  
uit.  
to  
ed,  
res  
he  
is

Chap. I. OF IRELAND.

43

This Company of Staplers being the first Corporation of *England* for the Regulation of Trade, it was dandled and hugg'd by the State, as that which contained the spirit and life of all the Traf- fique of the Kingdom, not only to regulate the abuses of Trade, but to recover their Trade out of the hands of Foreigners, especially the Yeild of the *Hance* beforementioned, who by reason of their great Stock and Credit from so many foreign Cities incorporated with them, ingrossed the chief Trade of *England*, particular Merchants being not able to thrive under their shadow, which was the reason the Staple was so often removed from Country to Country, and City to City, still to way-lay and interpose betwixt the Yeild of the *Hance* and the Trade of *England*.

The original or beginning of the Yeild of the *Hance* I find not; but *Fitz Stephen* a Monk of *Canterbury*, who wrote in the time of King *Stephen*, observes that Merchants of all Nations had their distinct Keys and Wharfs in *London*, the *Hance* or *Dutch* had the *Still-yards*, the *French* for the Wines, the *Vintry*, &c.

*William of Malmesbury*, who wrote in the time of the Conqueror, called *London* a Noble City, frequented with the Trade of Merchandizes from all parts of the World: *Malmesbury* cites *Clifford*, declaring the same in *Edward the Confessor's* time, 1042. and how long before is uncertain; but so long it was that they had ingrossed the chief Trade of *England*, &c. and had taken such deep root, it cost the State great trouble, and the Staple great labour

labour before they could loosen them: *Edward* the first began it at *Westminster*, then removed it to *Canterbury*, in Honour of *Thomas Becket*, then to *Bruges* in *Flanders*, from thence to the divers places in *England* and *Ireland* beforementioned, next to *Calice*, in order to strengthen and support that *Garrison*, at which time the King had granted him in Parliament, the twenty sixth of his Reign, Fifty shillings upon every Sack of Wool transported for six years, and at the same time there were yearly transported more than one hundred thousand Sacks of Wool; that during the six years the said Grant brought into the Kings Exchequer one Million five hundred thousand pounds Sterling.

In the 37th. of *Edward* the third, it was granted to him for two years, to take twenty six shillings and eight pence upon every Sack of Wool transported; and the same year the Staple ( notwithstanding the Kings Oath, and other great Estates) was ordained to be kept at *Calice*, and twenty six Merchants, the best and wealthiest of all *England*, to be Farmers there, both of the Town and Staple, for three years, every Merchant to have six Men of Arms and four Archers at the Kings cost; he ordained there also two Mayors, one for the Town, and one for the Staple; and he took *Mala capta*, commonly called *Mallorth*, twenty shillings, and of the said Merchants, Guardians of the Town, forty pence upon every Sack of Wool.

In the 44th. of *Edward* the third *Quinborough*,  
*Kingstone*

*Kingstone upon Hull* and *Boston* were made Staples of Wool, which matter so offended some, that in the 50th. year of his Reign, in a Parliament at *London*, it was complained, that the Staple of Wool was so removed from *Calice*, to divers Towns in *England*, contrary to the Statute, appointing, that Citizens and Merchants should keep it there, and that the King might have the Profits and Customs, with the Exchange of the Gold and Silver that was there made, by all the Merchants in Christendom, (esteemed to amount to Eight thousand pounds by the year) the Exchange only; and the Citizens and the Merchants so ordered the matter, that the King spent nothing upon Souldiers, neither upon Defence of the Town against the Enemies; whereas now he spent Eight thousand pounds by the year: in the 51th. year of *Edward* the third, when the Staple was settled at *Calice*, the Mayor of the Staple did furnish the Captain of the Town, upon any Road, with one hundred Bill-men and two hundred Archers, of Merchants and their Servants, without any Wages.

In the year 1388. the 12th. of *Richard* the second, in a Parliament at *Cambridge*, it was ordain-ed, that the Staple of Wools should be brought from *Middleborough in Zealand* to *Calice*.

In the 14th. of his Reign there was granted forty shillings upon every Sack of Wool; and in the 21th. was granted fifty shillings upon every Sack transported by *Englishmen*, and three pounds by *Strangers, &c.*

It seems that all Commodities of the Realm are staple Merchandizes by Law and Charter, as Wools, Leather, Wool Fells, Led, Tin, Cloth, &c.

King *Henry the sixth* had six Wool-houses within the Staple at *Westminster*, those he granted to the Dean and Canons of St. *Stephen* at *Westminster*, and confirm'd it the 21. of his Reign. Thus much for the Staple have I shortly noted out of *Stow's Survey of London*, fol. 496, 497.

Now by this account of the Staple, it is easie to imagine of what a high value it was both to the Kings and Parliaments of *England*, for upwards of 200 years no new Corporations for Trade were constituted; and as they increased in Trade, it abated of its ancient vigor and splendor, after it had worn out all Foreigners, and rescued the Clothing Trade from the *Dutch*, that the Wools of *England* were prohibited, the Transportation of which being its chief support.

But *Ireland* yet transporting most of its Wools, it can lay the Foundation of a Corporation for the Increase of its Foreign Traffique upon no better basis; the Statute Staple being yet in force in *Ireland*, it will make their Constitution legal until a Parliament be called, and no better Methods and Rules can be contrived than what the Statute Staple institutes.

## C H A P. II.

*The second Expedient to recover Irelands Decays in its Trade and Wealth is, to endavour to convince England, that it is the Interest both of King and Realm to promote it.*

1. *T*HAT it is the Interest of *England*, that the English Interest in *Ireland* should grow and flourish in Trade and Wealth is manifest, though it hath been its ruining fate, to have it otherwise apprehended by Statesmen of *England* both in Court and Parliaments, which must proceed from taking wrong measures of the English Interest of *Ireland*, especially since the suppression of the last Rebellion.

For it is with Politick as with Natural Bodies, whilst the peccant Humour that feeds the Disease is most predominant, the Body must be kept low; but so soon as the natural Strength gains the dominion over the Distemper, the more ye nourish it, the faster Health increaseth; and that this is *Ireland's* present case is manifest; for if it be considered, that before the last Rebellion the *Irish* Interest was potent.

1. The *Irish* were far the greater number of Proprietors of Land, possessing ten Acres for one; whereas

whereas now of the Ten millions eight hundred sixty eight thousand nine hundred forty nine Acres, returned by the last Survey of *Ireland*, the Irish Papists are possest but of Two millions forty one thousand one hundred and eight Acres, which is but a small matter above the fifth part of the whole; and as the Proprietors of Lands, so is it in their Plantations; for where there was one *English* Planter before the last Rebellion 1641. it is judged there is three now: and in several of the principal Counties next adjacent to *England*, as *Wicklow* and *Wexford*, where there was ten *Irish* Papists to one *English* Protestant, the odds now lies on the other hand.

2. Before 1641. their Interest in the Lands and Popularity of the Inhabitants necessitated the Government to admit them to all County-Offices, as High Sheriffs, Justices, &c. wherby they had opportunity to encourage the *Irish*, and discountenance the *English*; but now not one *Irish* Sheriff, or Justice in the Kingdom.

3. Before the Rebellion the chief Inhabitants of all principal Cities and strong Towns were *Irish* Papists, who bore all Offices, and managed the chief Trade of those places, all which places are now planted, or at least governed by *English* Protestants.

4. Before the Rebellion those Freeholders, and Proprietors of Lands, there were in *Ireland*, were not the Kings Tenants; but derived their Titles from the *Irish* Noblemen and Gentlemen, which contracted an immediate dependence upon them; and

and kept an awing influence over them; for though the Kings of *England* were owned as Lords of *Ireland*, yet the Lords of *Ireland* ruled as Kings, and were so styled by the Kings of *England*, as is observed by Sir *John Davis* out of several Records; saith he, *They governed their people by their Brehon Law, they made their Magistrates and Officers, they pardoned and punished all Malefactors, they made War and Peace one with another without controlment, and this to the Reign of Queen Elizabeth*, pag. 13, 14. So *Hovendon*, p. 312. and were not entirely subjected to the English Laws until the 9th. of King James: but had that learned Observer lived until the 12th. of *Charles the Second*, he would have admitted *Ireland* was never entirely subjected to the Crown of *England*, nor the Lands of *Ireland* never properly called the Kings Land, until the Act of Settlement then past; as Sir *Audley Mervin*, then Speaker to the House of Commons, in his Speech to the Duke of *Ormonde*, called that Act *Irelands Magna Charta*, it exceeding all former Grants of the Kings of *England*, and former Submissions of the body of the People of *Ireland* in these particulars.

1. As a free Act of Grace, when His Majesty was under no politick Obligation, but what meer Grace and Bounty mov'd him, to which never any Grant before was; for though they were still styled Acts of Grace, yet Reason of State interposed for them; which will be easily granted, if the State of *England* and *Ireland* be compared at the time of those former Royal Confessions, when the

*Irish* still treated with their Swords in their hands, or at least hid where they knew how to find them, if they were not answered in their expectation ; as in the History of *Desmonds* and *Tyrones*, &c. Rebellion is manifest.

2. Former Grants did only dispose of some Countrys, or Lordships, to some few persons who depended upon the Crown, and all others upon them : but this of the whole Land, that was not before disposed of ; whereby there is more Tenants to the Crown settled by this Act, above forty for one, than by any former Grants.

3. Not only the Lands of *Ireland*, but all the Cities and strong walled Towns are secured in hands true to the Crown of *England* by this Act, that never were before.

4. By this Act there is a Revenue secured to the King, sufficient to maintain a compleat Army to preserve the Peace, which never was before.

Therefore I argue the state of the Interest not only of the Crown but of the Kingdom of *Ireland* is altered, as to the Freehold Interest above double, nay treble, to what it ever was before ; the *English* being in possession, by that Act, of four millions five hundred sixty thousand thirty seven Acres, and the *Irish* but in two millions three hundred twenty three thousand eight hundred and nine ; so that if the majority of Proprietors may give the deno-

denominations to a Country, which usually it doth; Ireland is become *West England*.

Besides this, the governing party universally professeth and only incourageth the *English* publick Worship; it is governed by *English* Laws enacted by *English* Parliaments, and administred by *English* Judges, guarded by an *English* Army, and governed by *English* Ministers of State, to that degree it never was before; and all this administred by the absolute Commission from the King of *England*: and must it yet be kept under, and esteemed of as an *Irish* Interest, and Country? when the very Nature and civil Constitution of *Ireland* is altered; and proportionably ought the Wealth and Prosperity of it to be promoted by *England* for these Reasons.

I. It is the Interest both of the Crown and People of *England* to enable the *English* Interest of *Ireland* not only to support its self in peace, but to defend its self in war; which nothing but promoting its Trade and Wealth will do, especially the Wealth of its Cities and walled Towns: for the increasng its Wealth in the Fields, doth rather increase its danger, by enouraging the needy Natives the rather to rise, when they observe how easily they can possess themselves of so great a Booty; but the Wealth of the Cities and strong Towns, which is the trading Stock of the Nation, is secure, and ready to be imployed in the defence of their King and Countries Interest, when in danger: besides, they are the only security and refuge to the

distressed *English*, when banished from their Country Habitations; and these places of strength cannot subsist without Trade and Manufacture, but by more chargeable Garisons than the Revenue of *Ireland* will bear.

And what *Ireland* cannot do in order to its safety, *England* must supply, to prevent its own danger; for if ever an Enemy surprize and possess *Ireland*, especially the *French*, *England* must maintain a greater standing Force to secure themselves, than would have preserved *Ireland*, if employed in its Defence: it is not a groundless proverb, *He that would England win must with Ireland first begin*; and if the *French*, who hath already the opposite Coast, and Harbours from *Dunkirk* to *Brest*, ever obtain *Ireland*, they will then surround three parts of four of *England*, and a great part of *Scotland*, so near that in a few hours they may invade what part they please; which would necessitate *England* to be at the charge of a considerable standing Army and Fleet, to prevent *French* Invasion, at double the charge of preserving *Ireland* now: and the Invader with two ordinary Squadrons of Ships, one at *Brest*, and the other at *Baltimore*, *Bantrie*, or any of those bold Western Harbours, they would so distress the Trade of *England*, a Ship should with much difficulty pass Southward without a great Convey, but they would seize him; and then possessing the Wools of *Ireland*, they would utterly ruine the Clothing Trade of *England*; and if nothing else can, that will convince *England*, when too late, that the strength of the English Interest of *Ireland*

Ireland is their Bulwark, as to foreign Invasion of their Country, and violent wresting from thence their Trade.

The second Reason is, because *Englands* neglect herein hath been the cause of that intolerable charge *Ireland* hath cost *England*, in preserving and recovering its Interest in *Ireland* in times past, more than *Ireland* was worth to be bought and sold when *Henry the second* first conquered it.

*Cambden* in his Appendix to *Eliz.* tells us, *Tyrone's* War cost *England* one million one hundred ninty eight thousand seven hundred and seventeen pounds: *Borlacy* in his History of the Rebellion of 1641. computes the Charge of *England* in that War unto twenty two millions one hundred ninty one thousand two hundred fifty eight pounds three shillings; then compute the Charge of its first Conquest by *Henry the second*, with the suppressing of the several Rebellions from that time unto *Tyrone's* Rebellion 1595. to cost *England* but double as much as *Tyrone's* Suppression did, which (if *Spencer* mistakes not) were every seven years in the *Queens* time; and he writ his *View of Ireland* in the later end of her long Reign of forty four years, which were at least six Rebellions in the *Queens* time; (and it is evident by our Histories, as I have noted in my Catalogue, *Ireland* never enjoyed seven years peace together from its first Conquest to that time;) then *Ireland* hath cost *England* twenty four millions five hundred eighty eight thousand six hundred ninty two pounds, which is near three pounds *per Acre*, one with another, for all the Land

they possess in *Ireland*, which is above double its value now, and above four times its worth to purchase *Anno 1172.* when *Henry the second* conquered it; and so sensible were our Predecessors hereof, that in the *11th. year of Queen Elizabeth*, Sir *Henry Sidney* Lord Deputy, in the Preamble to the *Act of Parliament for a Subsidy* they thus expressed themselves to the Queen, *viz.* Considering *the infinite masses of Treasure, able to purchase a Kingdom, that your most noble Progenitors have exhausted for the Government, Defence and Preservation of your Majesties Realm of Ireland*: and in the body of the said *Act* thus; *We for the Alienation of some part of your Majesties inestimable Charge do revive the said Subsidy*: yet after this *Desmond*, and (towards the later end of the Queens Reign) *Tyrone* were chargeable Rebels to *Ireland*: and that most excellent *Governour*, of whom *Campion* gives this *Character*; *A man much beloved, stately without disdain, familiar without contempt, very continent, learned in many Languages, a great Lover of Learning, skilful in Antiquities, in utterance happy, &c.* This Noble person, who had spent the most part of his Life in *Ireland*, *viz.* from the third of *Queen Mary* to the thirteenth of *Elizabeth, March 25. 1571.* in his most elegant Speech in Parliament, printed at large by *Campion*, in Reply to some that grumbled at the Charge of the Army, reasons thus; *Many a good fellow talks of Robin Hood, that never drew in his Bow, and many an idle Head is full of Proclamations, &c. but let me see which of them can justifie that Ireland can*

*spare*

art 2.  
ple its  
pur-  
con-  
cessors  
beth,  
le to  
ex-  
er-  
use a  
ex-  
rra-  
the  
n of  
do  
nd,  
gn)  
and  
um-  
ed,  
ppi,  
4  
in  
ho  
iz.  
of  
ant  
on,  
of  
ks  
nd  
ut  
an  
re

Chap. 2. OF IRELAND.

55

spare the Army, &c. Are your Enemies more tractable, are they fewer, are your selves of force to match them? if you be, then were England stark mad, to disburse thirty thousand pounds a year, for no other purpose but to vex and grieve you; that were like the Husband who gelded himself to anger his Wife, &c. whose Arguments are still in force, for the keeping up a potent Army in *Ireland*, notwithstanding the Charge.

I could give many instances of the vast Charge *Ireland* hath put *England* unto, above what it was ever worth to purchase; all which intolerable Charge hath proceeded from the not improving the English Interest in *Ireland* by Trade and Manufactures; whereby the English Planters have been constrained to betake themselves to Husbandry amongst the *Irish* for their livelihood, and the *Irish* being better acquainted with the nature of the Soyl, and accustomed to a more frugal way of living, have eaten up the substance of the English, by which they have been constrained to court their Friendship; and by their Fosterings, and mixtures by Marriage, multitudes of them have embraced their Religion, Customs and Manners, and degenerated to their Interest, as was manifest in the last Rebellion; the strength of the *Irish* consisted in the degenerate English.

And as *Ireland* is thus altered in its Estates, strong Holds, &c. treble to what it ever was before; so the Inhabitants, both *Irish* and degenerate old English, are many of them now English Protestants; there are many of the *Tooles*, *Burns*,

Cavenaghs, Releys, ò Neales, ò Bryans, ò Moores, ò Sullivants, Mac Cartys, Mac Laughlins, Mac Guires, &c. are now English Protestants: and more might have been long since, saith Spencer, if the English Government had done their parts, to have supplied the Country with learned, pious, and painful Preachers, that would have out-preach'd, and out-liv'd the Irish Priests in holy and godly Conversations, which that most intelligent Observer of Englands Defects in the Irish Affairs, pag. 113. saith thus; *In planting of Religion thus much is needful to be observed, &c. that it be not sought forcibly, to be impressed into them with terror, and sharp penalties, as now is the manner; but rather delivered and intimated with mildness and gentleness, so as it may not be hated before it be understood, and their Professors despised and rejected: And therefore it is expedient, that some discreet Ministers of their own Countrymen be first sent over amongst them, which by their meek persuasions and instructions, as also by their sober lives and conversations, may draw them first to understand, and afterwards to embrace the Doctrine of their Salvation: for if the ancient godly Fathers, which first converted them, when they were Infidels, to the Faith, were able to pull them from Idolatry and Paganism to the true Belief in Christ, as St. Patrick and St. Columb; how much more easily shall godly Teachers bring them to the true understanding of that which they already profess? wherein it's a great wonder to see the odds which is between the Zeal of Popish Priests, and the Ministers of the Gospel; for they*

fare

þare not to come out of Spain, from Rome, and from  
Rhemes, by long toyl, and dangerous travelling hi-  
ther, where they know peril of Death awaiteth them,  
and no Reward or Riches is to be found, only to draw  
the people unto the Church of Rome; wheras some  
of our idle Ministers, having a way for credit and  
estimation thereby opened unto them, and having  
the Livings of the Country offered unto them, with-  
out pains, and without peril, will neither for the  
same, nor any Love of God, nor zeal of Religion,  
nor for all the good they may do, by winning Souls to  
God, be drawn forth from their warm nests, to look  
out into Gods Harvest, which is even ready for the  
Sickle, and all the Fields yellow long ago; doubtless  
those good old Fathers will (I fear me) rise up in the  
day of Judgment to condemn them: thus this great  
Scholar and true Protestant avers, the true Reli-  
gion is not to be planted by penal Laws, or the ter-  
ror of punishments, which may fill a Church with  
temporising Hypocrites, but never with sincere  
Professors; nor is it to be propagated by a vicious,  
slothful Minister: So Heylin writing of the Irish,  
saith he, *For their Religion they either adhere to the  
Pope or their own superstitious Fancies, &c. and it  
is no wonder they should, there being no care taken  
to instruct them in the Protestant Religion, either by  
translating the Bible or English Lyturgy into their  
own Language, &c.* And to manifest the Irish are as  
capable of Conviction as others, he instances in Ric.  
Fitz Ralph Archbishop of Armagh, who flourished  
an. 1350. a declared enemy to the Errors and Cor-  
ruptions of the Church of Rome, *Heyl. Cosm. 34<sup>1.</sup>*

But

But notwithstanding these Defects that have been in the Governments and Clergy, it is evident many of the ordinary sort of *Irish Papists* are now Protestants; and not only they, but divers Noble and Worshipful Families of great Interest in their Country formerly Papists, are now Protestants; as appears by the annexed Catalogue of the *Irish Nobility*; which, as it greatly weakens the Popish *Irish*, so it much strengthens the *English* Protestant Interest, by reducing the highest Court of Judicature from an *Irish* to an *English* constitution, which doth alter the nature of our Parliaments; that as the House of Commons, if Election be permitted without a Test, will be three for one on the *English* side, as they that know the constitution of the Corporations in the annexed Schedule will grant; so the House of Peers is hereby reduced at least three for one on the *English* Protestants side, as by the annexed Catalogue appears: and while God blesses us with an *English* Protestant King and Parliament, *Ireland* can never degenerate from an *English* Protestant Interest: and therefore may safely be trusted under the Conduct of an *Irish* Protestant chief Governour; as in the next Chapter is asserted.

A LIST of what PLACES return  
 PARLIAMENT-MEN  
 I N  
 I R E L A N D.

<b>Leinster.</b>			
County of Catherlough	2	Bor. of Knoctopher	2
Bor. of Catherlough	2	Bor. of St. Kennis	2
Borough of Old Leighlin	2	City of Kilkenny	2
	—		—
	<i>total</i> 6		<i>total</i> 18
County of Dublin	2	County of Kildare	2
City of Dublin	2	Bor. of Kildare	2
University of Dublin	3	Bor. of Naas	2
Bor. of Newcastle	2	Bor. of Athy	2
Bor. of Swordes	2		—
	—		<i>total</i> 8
	<i>total</i> 11		
Villa de Drogheda	2	County Regis	2
		Bor. of Philips Town	2
		Bor. of Byrr.	2
		Bor. of Banagher	2
			—
County of Kilkenny	2	<i>total</i> 8	
Bor. of Callen	2		
Borough of Thomas Town	2		
Bor. of Gowran	2	County of Meath.	2
Bor. of Kells	2	Bor. of Trim	2
Bor. of Emistoege	2	Bor. of Kells	2
			—
			Bor.

## The Interest

Part 2.

Bor. of Navan  
 Bor. of Athbuy  
 Bor. of Duleeke  
 Bor. of Ratooth

2	Bor. of Featherd	2
2	Bor. of Bannow	2
2	Bor. of Cloghmaine	2
2	Bor. of Arkloe	2
—	Bor. of Taghman	2
total 14	Bor. of Newborough	2

County Reginæ  
 Bor. of Bellakill  
 Bor. of Maryborough  
 Port Arlington

2		total 20
2		
2	County of Longford	2
2	Town of Longford	2
—	Bor. of Lanesborough	2
total 8		—

County of West Meath  
 Bor. of Athlone  
 Bor. of Fower  
 Bor. of Kilbegan  
 Bor. of Mullingar

2		total 6
2	County of Louth	2
2	Bor. of Dundalk	2
2	Bor. of Arthdee	2
2	Bor. of Carlingford	2
—		—
total 10		total 8

County of Wicklow  
 Bor. of Wicklow  
 Bor. of Caresford  
 Bor. of Baltinglass

2		Munster.
2	County of Cork	2
2	City of Cork	2
2	Bor. of Mallow.	2
2	Bor. of Baltimore	2
—	Bor. of Cloghne Kilty	2
total 8	Bor. of Bandonbridge	2

County of Wexford  
 Town of Wexford  
 Town of Ross  
 Bor. of Eniscourthy

2	Bor. of Kinsale	2
2	Bor. of Youghal	2
—		—
total 16		
	County	

County of Clare 2  
Bor. of Inish 2

total 4

County of Kerry 2  
Bor. of Traley 2  
Bor. of Dinglecough 2  
Bor. of Ardfart 2

total 8

County of Limerick 2  
City of Limerick 2  
Bor. of Kilmallock 2  
Bor. of Askeaton 2

total 8

County of Tipperary 2  
Town of Tipperary 2  
Bor. of Clonmell 2  
Bor. of Featherd 2  
Town of Cashell 2  
Bor. of Thurles 2

total 12

County of Waterford 2  
City of Waterford 2  
Bor. of Dungharvan 2  
Bor. of Lismore 2  
Bor. of Tallow 2

total 10

## Ulster.

County of Ardmagh 2  
Bor. of Ardmagh 2  
Bor. of Charlemount 2

total 6

County of Antrim 2  
Bor. of Belfast 2  
Bor. of Carickfargus 2  
Borough of Lisbon 2  
Borough of Antrim 2

total 10

County of Cavan 2  
Bor. of Cavan 2  
Bor. of Belturbett 2

total 6

County of Down 2  
Bor. of Down 2  
Bor. of Newtown 2  
Bor. of Newry 2  
Ballkillaleagh 2  
Bor. of Bangar 2  
Bor. of Hilsborough 2

total 14

County

<i>County of Donnegall</i>	2	<i>Connaght.</i>
<i>Bor. of Lifford</i>	2	<i>County of Gallway</i>
<i>Bor. of Ballishanon</i>	2	<i>Bor. of Gallway</i>
<i>Bor. of Kilbeks</i>	2	<i>Bor. of Athenry</i>
<i>Bor. of Donnegall</i>	2	<i>Bor. of Tuam</i>
<i>Bor. of St. Johns Town</i>	2	
	—	
		<i>total 8</i>
	<i>total 12</i>	
<i>County of Farmanagh</i>	2	<i>County of Leitrim</i>
<i>Bor. of Eniskilling</i>	2	<i>Bor. of James Town</i>
	—	<i>Bor. of Carickdrumrusk</i>
		<i>total 6</i>
	<i>total 4</i>	
<i>County of Londonderry</i>	2	<i>Couty of Mayo</i>
<i>City of Londonderry</i>	2	<i>Bor. of Castlebarr</i>
<i>Bor. of Coleraine</i>	2	
<i>Bor. of Lamnevaddy</i>	2	
	—	
	<i>total 8</i>	
		<i>total 4</i>
<i>County of Monaghan</i>	2	<i>County of Roscommon</i>
<i>Bor. of Monaghan</i>	2	<i>Bor. of Roscommon</i>
	—	<i>Bor. of Tulsk</i>
		<i>total 6</i>
	<i>total 4</i>	
<i>County of Tyrone</i>	2	<i>County of Sligo</i>
<i>Bor. of Donnegall</i>	2	<i>Bor. of Sligo</i>
<i>Town of Clogher</i>	2	
<i>Bor. of Agber</i>	2	
<i>Bor. of Strabane</i>	2	
	—	
		<i>total 4</i>
	<i>total 10</i>	
		<i>The whole number 285</i>
		Of which, considering the present constitution of these Corporations, no man can think where ten Papists can carry an Election.

A Catalogue of the present PEERS of *IRELAND*, 1681. not in exact Order as to Seniority, though I used my utmost endeavours to have done that, designing only to manifest the Strength of the *English* Interest in the House of Peers.

## PROTESTANTS.

Duke Ormond.

## Earls

Kildare  
Thomond  
Cork  
Desmond  
Barrymore  
Meath  
Offery  
Roscommon  
Londonderry  
Donnegall

## PAPISTS.

Marquess Antrym.

## Earls.

Clanrickard  
Castlehaven  
West Meath  
Fingall  
Castlemayne  
Carlingford.

PRO-

PA-

## PROTESTANTS.

Arran  
Conaway  
Carberry  
Ardglass  
Rannalagh  
Cavan  
Inchiquin  
Clancarty  
Orrery  
Mountroth  
Drogheda  
Waterford  
Mountalexander  
Down  
Longford  
Tyrone

*Viscounts.*

Grandison  
Wilmot  
Loftus of Ely  
Swordes  
Kilmurry

PRO-

## PAPISTS.

Costalo  
Mayo  
Merrion  
Fairfax  
Fitz Williams

PA

## PROTESTANTS.

Castleton  
Chaworth  
Sligo  
Waterford  
Strangford  
Tuam  
Cashell  
Carelow  
Cullen  
Shannon  
Dromoore  
Mazareene  
Kells  
Dungannon  
Fitz Harding  
Clare  
Charlemount  
Powers Court  
Blessington  
Ross.

*Barons.*

Kinsale  
Kerry  
Hoath  
Mountjoy  
Foliot

## PAPISTS.

Rathcoole  
Bareford  
Bronkart  
Galmoy  
Kingsland

*Barons*

Athenry  
Cahir  
Baltimore  
Strabane.

## PROTESTANTS.

## PAPISTS.

Maynard  
Georges  
Digbey  
Lifford  
Herbert  
Loghlin  
Coleraine  
Leitrim  
Donmore  
Killard  
Kingston  
Colooney  
Santry  
Clawnally  
Altram.

<i>Duke</i>	<i>I</i>	<i>Marquess</i>	<i>I</i>
<i>Earls</i>	<i>26</i>	<i>Earls</i>	<i>6</i>
<i>Viscounts</i>	<i>25</i>	<i>Viscounts</i>	<i>II</i>
<i>Barons</i>	<i>20</i>	<i>Barons</i>	<i>4</i>
	<hr/>		<hr/>
	<i>72</i>		<i>22</i>
	<hr/>		<hr/>
<i>Bishops</i>	<i>24</i>	<i>To ballance</i>	<i>74</i>
	<hr/>		<hr/>
	<i>96</i>		<i>96</i>

Besides, the Protestants have the advantage of our reverend Protestant Judges, and the King, learned Councils to advise & countenance the Protestant Interest in Ireland in that highest Court.

A Catalogue of the Nobility of  
*Ireland Anno 1571.* recorded  
 by *Campion* fol. 5.

*Earls.*

Errald Fitz Girald of Kildare,  
 His eldest Son *Lord Baron of Ophaly.*  
 Sir Thomas Butler of Ormond and Ossery,  
 His eldest Son *Viscount Thurles.*  
 Fitz Girald of Desmond,  
 His eldest Son *Baron of Inshycoin.*  
 Sir Richard Bourk of Clanrickard,  
 His eldest Son *Baron of Donkeline.*  
 Conegher Obrene of Thomond,  
 His eldest Son *Baron of Ibrecane.*  
 Mac Carty More of Clarcar,  
 His eldest Son *Baron of Valentia.*

*Viscounts.*

Bartie,  
 Roche,  
 Preston of Gormanstown,  
 Eastace alias Power of Baltinglass,  
 Sir Richard Butler of Montgaret,  
 Deces,

## Barons.

*Lord* Birmingham of Athenry,  
 John Birmingham,  
 Mac Morice alias Fitz Girald of Kery,  
*Lord* Courcey,  
*Lord* Fleming of Slane,  
 Plunket of Killyne,  
 Newgent of Delvin,  
 St. Laurance of Hoath,  
 Plonket of Doonesawney,  
 Barnwell of Trimleston,  
 Butler of Donboyne,  
 Phitz Patrick of Upper Ossery,  
 Clonagh Mac Gilpatrick,  
 Plonket of Louth,  
 O Neal of Dungannon,  
 Power of Curraghmore,  
 Mac Suretan *Lord* Deseret,  
 Obrene of Inshycouin,  
 Mac Costilaghe *Lord* Nangle,  
 Mac William Burck *Lord* of Eighter Con-  
 naght.

A Catalogue of the *Irish* Nobility

*Anno 1641.* as I find it in the Heralds Office, by which may be observed something of the Seniority of their Dignities, comparing it with that of 1681. But it is useful to inform the great alteration of the Constitution of the House of Peers, since that time, to the advantage of the *English* Interest.

*Earls.*

George Fitz Girald *of Kildare*,  
James Butler *of Ormond and Offery*,  
Henry O Bryan *of Thomond*,  
Ulick de Bourk *of Clanrickard*,  
James Tuchet *of Castlehaven*,  
Richard Boyle *of Cork*,  
Randall Mac Dannell *of Antrym*,  
Richard Nugent *of West Meath*,  
James Dillon *of Roscommon*,  
Robert Bridgeway *of Londonderry*,  
George Fielding *of Desmond*,  
William Brabazon *of Meath*,  
David Barry *of Barrymore*,  
Richard Vaughan *of Carberry*,  
Luke Plunket *of Fingall*,  
William Pope *of Down*,  
Thomas Cromwell *of Ardglass*.

## Viscounts.

Nicholas Preston of Gormanstown,  
 David Roth of Fermoy,  
 Richard Butler of Montgarret,  
 William Villars of Grandison,  
 Charles Wilmot of Athlone,  
 Henry Poore of Valentia,  
 Charles Moore of Drogheda,  
 Thomas Dillon of Castillo,  
 Nicholas Neterville of Louth,  
 Hugh Montgomery of the Ards,  
 James Hamleton of Claneboy,  
 Adam Loftus of Ely,  
 Sapcot Beumont of Swordes,  
 Hugh Magennis of Evagh,  
 Thomas Cromwell of Lecale,  
 Edward Chichester of Carickfargus,  
 Robert Needham of Kilmurry,  
 Dominick Scarsfeild of Kilmallock,  
 Thomas Somerset of Cashell,  
 Edward Conway of Kilultagh,  
 Miles Bourk of Mayo,  
 Thomas Roper of Baltinglass,  
 Nicholas Sanderson of Castleton,  
 Lewis Boyle of Kilmakey,  
 George Chaworth of Ardmagh,  
 Thomas Savile of Savile,

John

John Scudamore *of Sligo*,  
Robert Chalmundly *of Kells*,  
Richard Lumley *of Waterford*,  
Thomas Smith *of Strangford*,  
Richard Wenman *of Tuam*,  
John Taafe *of Cerine*,  
William Mounton *of Castlemaine*,  
Roger Jones *of Ranelagh*,  
Charles Mac Carty *of Muskry*,  
Richard Mulleneux *of Maryburg*,  
Thomas Fairfax *of Emeley*,  
Thomas Bourk *of Clanmorris*,  
Pierce Butler *of Ikerine*,  
Thomas Fitz Williams *of Merryyoung*,  
Terence Dempsey *of Glanmaleyra*.

*Lord Barons.*

Richard Bermingham *of Athenry*,  
Girald Courcey *of Kinsale*,  
Patrick Fitz Morris *of Kerry & Lixmew*,  
William Flemming *of Slaine*,  
Nicholas St. Laurance *of Hoath*,  
Patrick Plunket *of Dunsawny*,  
Robert Barnwell *of Trimleston*,  
John Power *of Coroghmore*,  
Edward Butler *of Dunboyne*,  
Barnabas Mac Gilpatrick *of Upper Ossery*,  
Oliver Plunket *of Louth*,

Murrough O Bryan *of Inchequin*,  
 Edmond Bourke *of Castleconnell*,  
 Thomas Butler *of Cahir*,  
 Mountjoy Blunt *of Mountjoy*,  
 Charles Lambert *of Cavan*,  
 Theobald Bourke *of Brittias*,  
 Andrew Steward *of Castlesteward*,  
 James Belfoure *of Glanawley*,  
 Thomas Foliot *of Ballishanon*,  
 William Maynard *of Wicklow*,  
 Edward Georges *of Dunalke*,  
 Robert Digbey *of Geashell*,  
 William Harvey *of Rosse*,  
 William Fitz Williams *of Lifford*,  
 William Caufield *of Charlemount*,  
 Theodore Dockray *of Culmore*,  
 Girald Aungier *of Longford*,  
 Henry Blaney *of Monaghan*,  
 Laurence Esmond *of Limerick*, (Curety,  
 Dermond O Malunc *of Glan Malune* and  
 Edward Herbert *of Castleisland*,  
 Cecil Calvert *of Baltimore*,  
 William Brereton *of Loghlin*,  
 Hugh Hare *of Coleraine*,  
 William Sherrard *of Leitrim*,  
 Roger Boyle *of Broghill*,  
 Conner Mac Guire *of Iniskilline*,  
 Francis Ansley *of Mount Norris*.

And

And as it is the Interest of the Crown and Realm of *England*, to promote the prosperity of the *English* Interest in *Ireland*; so it is equally the Interest of the *Irish* Papists themselves to aid and promote the same; their contrary apprehensions have been their ruin: for from thence have proceeded all their bloody Massacres and Rebellions; and though it hath cost *England* vast quantities of Blood and Treasure to subdue them, yet they paid the Reckoning at last, to the utter ruin of most of the great Lords and Septs; and just it should be so, if the Right and Title of *England* to what it possesse, and endeavoured to keep in *Ireland* be impartially considered.

If we omit what all our Histories record of the ancient Sovereignty the Kings of *Britain* claimed, and enjoyed in *Ireland*; as that in the time of *Gurguntius, Anno Dom. 359.* they were his Subjects, and after that in the time of King *Arthur Anno 519.* above 600 years before *Henry the second* conqueredit 1172. the King summoned all the Kings and Lords of *Ireland* to attend *Gilmarrow*, their Monarch, and with him perform their Homage at *Carlisle*, which they all did accordingly.

And only consider the justness of the Cause of *Strongbow* and his Comrades in their first Adventure, it was not only with the consent, but at the desire of their own King; they contracted with *Dermot Mac Morrough King of Leinster*, a banish'd oppressed Prince, to aid him in the recovery of his just Rights, a quarrel not only approved to be just, but charitable, by all *Casuists, Pagans, Turks, Jews,*

Jews, and Christians, to relieve and assist the weak and oppressed against the strong Oppressor, and what was the just Right of *Mac Morrough* to recover, was in his power to dispose, and lawful for his Aiders to receive; it being their due by contract before they would adventure, that *Strongbow* should have delivered *Mac Morrough's* only Daughter and Heir in Marriage, and his Kingdom after her Fathers decease, and that *Fitz Stephen* and *Fitz Gerald*, &c. should have the Town of *Wexford*, and two Cantreds of Land adjoyning, which places were accordingly gained by their Sword, and given them in possession by the legal Proprietor; and had they been permitted quietly to enjoy this small part they so rightfully possest, they had gone no further.

But instead thereof, *Roderick King of Connacht*, then sole Monarch of *Ireland*, raiseth the whole Kingdom to drive out *Mac Morrough* and his *Welshmen*; upon which he appeals to *Strongbow*, and renewes former contracts, who hasts over with about 1200 fresh Men, by them wars with the *Waterfordians*, who were in Arms against him, took the City, and married the Kings Daughter, with an assurance of the Reversion of the Kingdom, and soon after disperses his Enemies, then surrendred all his Conquests to the King, who came over with a new Force to secure his Interest, which so terrified the *Irish*, that all their Kings and great Lords proffered to be tributary, and swore Allegiance; and had they so continued, they had felt no farther damages.

But

But  
they are  
of what  
due to  
tained  
Irish  
their  
the  
Kings  
of time  
and so  
in the  
pleasur

No  
Duty  
Conce  
sustain  
Domini  
had en  
ded to  
defend

So  
rection  
their  
land;  
the w  
of trou  
Strugg

W  
their  
some  
Engla

But no sooner was the Kings back turned, but they are again up in Arins, to disposels the *English* of what they had so justly atchieved, who still subdued them, and gained ground of them, and obtained Grants of their new Conquests until all the Irish Kings and great Lords were vanquished, and their Lands, &c. possest by the *English* Victors: the Heirs of *Ulster* and *Connaght* married to the Kings Subjects, whose successive Heirs in process of time were married unto the Royal Family; and so their Lands and Honours came Hereditary in the Crown, who of right disposed of them at pleasure.

Now had it not been the Interest as well as the Duty of the *Irish*, to have submitted to their first Concessions? Then *Dermot Mac Morrough* had sustained no wrong, his right Heir had enjoyed his Dominion, and the rest of the *Irish* great Lords had enjoyed their particular Rights; none pretended to disturb them, until constrained in their own defence.

So if we take a further view of their many Insurrections, and perfidious Rebellions, since they held their Honours and Lands from the Crown of *England*; it will appear they were tempted to it by the weakness of the *English* Interest; as in times of troubles in *England* by the Barons Wars, and Struggles betwixt the two Roses, &c.

When the Kings of *England* drew over part of their Army for *Ireland*, some taking one side, and some the other, which did not only weaken *Englands* Strength in *Ireland*, but divided what were

were left into powerful Factions betwixt the great *English* Lords of *Ireland*; which became the cause of the ruine of that great Family of *Desmond*, with several others of good Rank, who, though degenerated from their *English* Civilities, yet after they turned Rebels against their Prince, they fell wholly off to the Interest, Manners and Customs of his and their own former *Irish* Enemy, whereby *Ireland* was to be new conquered and replanted: for the degenerate *English* were more stubborn Rebels, and with more difficulty subdued, than the rebellious Natives; for although their Minds and Manners were degenerated, they had so much *English* Blood left in their Veins, as gave them *English* Courage and Resolution, whereby *Tho. Fitz Giralds* and *Desmonds* Rebellions became harder work to subdue, than any before them, they also receiving great Incouragements and Aids from the Pope and King of *Spain*, upon the account of Religion, they became obdurate; the same Indulgences that were granted to the Souldiers fighting against the *Turk* in the holy War being sent them, whereby their Consciences were not only released from their Obligations of Allegiance to their Prince, but strongly engaged on the behalf of holy Church, *to extirpate that mad and venomous Doctrine and Hellish Opinion*, as the Protestant Faith was then termed, in a Pamphlet then publish'd, intituled, *A Declaration of the Divines of Salamanca and Vallidolid*, dispersed through *Ireland* by *O Sullivan* a Spanish Priest; which, with divers other practices of the *Irish* to shake off the

English Government, is rehearsed and press'd by that pious Prelate, Primate *Usher*, the Glory of the Irish Protestant Church, in his elegant Speech to an Assembly of all the States of *Ireland*, April 1627. in which he defends my Assertion that it is the Interest of the *Irish*, to aid and support the Prosperity of the *English* Interest amongst them: and had they had Grace to have believed him, some thousands of *Irish* Families, now utterly ruined, might have been in a prosperous state: And after he had minded them of their traiterous tendering the Regency of *Ireland* to the *French* King, and upon his refusal to the *Spaniard*, which was by him accepted; for although *Henry* the fourth of *France* was not Apostate enough to invade his Protestant Neighbours, yet *Charles* the fifth of *Spain* and his Son *Philip* were Papist enough to admit the Popes Donation which the *Irish* obtained; for them Title good enough not only to claim *Ireland*, and invade it with several Armies of *Italians* and *Spaniards*, who landed at *Kinsale* and *Kerry*, to their cost, but also to attempt *England* by their supposed invincible Armado in 88. but the invincible just God did not only deliver us from their power, the Sword destroying his Land Souldiers in *Ireland*, and the Sea swallowing up his Naval Force assailing *England*, but also from that time blasted the Counsels and Successes of that aspiring Monarch, that their Fame and Potency hath ever since dwindled away. *Portugal* and the *Low Countries* soon after revolted; and the stately *Don*, who then talk'd and acted as proudly as *Monsieur* doth now, was

so

so far from beeing able to invade his Neighbours, he hath been put to his shifts to secure his Hereditary Countries: and, as old as I am, I hope to live to see it the case of *Monsieur*; who, though now stiled the most Christian King, hath declared himself the most inveterate Enemy to the most Christian Faith and Profession in the Christian World; and let but the Defender of the Faith turn his Subjects loose, with his Commission in their pockets, they would soon covince him of it; and let him know that the English Blood that inspired their Ancestors at the Battel of *Agincourt*, &c. is boylng hot in their Veins, and that *Charles the Second* may be as dreadful to *France* as ever was *Henry the fifth*, &c. when he pleaseth, if our God hath not given us up, for our impious provocations, to be a prey and a spoil, as he did *Israel* to the *Affyrians*, a bitter and hasty Nation. But to return to my Argument, that it is the Interest of the Irish Papists to further the Protestant English Interest in Ireland, I shall return to my reverend Author, saith he, *They put me in mind of the Philosophers Observations, that such who have a vehement respect to a few inferior things are easily misled to overlook many great things; so, saith he, they have so deep a sense of their present burthen of contributing small matters towards the support of the Kings Army, to secure us from foreign Invasions, that they overlook all those miserable Desolations that will come upon them by a long and heavy War, which the having of an Army in a readiness may be a means to prevent: the lamentable effects (said he) of the last Wars in this Kingdom*

Kingdom; other ca  
Land; tremity  
Women  
the mer  
of the E  
is a Sto  
wise m  
ful to n  
verable  
Neither  
fer from  
nity of  
the dan  
pect fro  
swee w  
case in  
tween a  
to mak  
looked  
with th  
which  
the Co  
not long  
Spain,  
Irish P  
lish Bla  
all your  
Spain,  
ring of  
South,

Kingdom doth yet freshly stick in our memories: neither can we so soon forget the Depopulation of our Land; when, besides the combustions of War, the extremity of Famine grew so great, that the very Women, in some places by the way side, have surprised the men that rode by, to feed themselves with the flesh of the Horse and the Rider: and that now again here is a Storm towards, wheresoever it will light every wise man will easily foresee, which if we be not careful to meet with in time, our estate may prove irrecoverable, when it will be too late to think of, Had I wist. Neither may you, my Lords and Gentlemen, that differ from us in point of Religion, imagine that Community of Profession will exempt you more then us from the danger of a common Eenemy; what you may expect from a Foreigner, you may conjecture by the Answer which the Duke of Medina Sidonia gave in this case in 88. That his Sword knew no difference between a Catholick and a Heretick, but that he came to make way for his Master, and what kindness they looked for from the Countrymen that were to joyn with them, they might judge as well by the carriage which they ordinarily used towards them both in the Court and Colledges abroad, as by the Advice, not long since, presented by them unto the Council of Spain, wherein they would not have so much as the Irish Priests and Jesuits that are descended of English Blood to be trusted, but would have you, and all yours, to be accounted Enemies to the Designs of Spain, in the Declaration published about the beginning of the Insurrection of James Fitz Morice in the South, the Rebels professed, it was no part of their meaning

meaning to subvert Honorable Anglorum solium, their Quarrel was only against the person of Queen Elizabeth and her Government: But now the case is otherwise; the translating of the Throne of the English to the power of a Foreigner is the thing that is mainly intended, and the re-establishing the Irish in their ancient Possessions, which by the valour of our Ancestors were gained from them. This (saith he) you may assure yourselves, Manet alta mente repositum, and makes you more to be hated of them, than any other of the English Nation whatsoever.

The danger thereof being thus common to us all, it stands us upon, to joyn our best helps for avoiding of it.

Thus you may see what deep Sentiments this great good man had of Irelands danger many years before that terrible Earthquake in 1641. tumbled down its peace and prosperity into its first Chaos, of which this holy Priest became a true Prophet 40 years before the Blow was given, in several Sermons preached before the Government, yet in print to be read.

*Anno Dom. 1601. from Ezek. 4. 6.* discoursing concerning the Prophets bearing the Iniquity of Judah 40 days, accounting a day for a year, he made this direct application in relation to the connivance at Popery at that time; *From this year, saith he, will I reckon the Sin of Ireland, that those whom you now embrace shall be your ruin, and you shall bear this iniquity:* which fell out exactly true both in point of time and thing, he also foretold all the Troubles that befell England both relating to

to Church and State, and lived to see them come to pass accordingly; as Dean *Bernard*, who writ his Life, and others have observed; and also recorded some of his prophetical Expressions near his end, of miseries yet to come upon the Church of God, as followeth.

*He being asked whether he thought that great Life of Bp. Persecution (which he had formerly spoken of to fall Usher, p. upon the Protestant Churches) were past, or yet to come,* he then turned his eyes towards the face of the enquirer, and fixing them there in a strange kind of manner, as he used to do when he spake not his own words, and when the power of God was upon him, said; *Fool not your self with vain hopes of its being past: for I tell you, what you have seen is but the beginning of sorrow to that which is to come on all the Protestant Churches, which e're long will fall under a sharper Persecution than ever yet they have had upon them, and that by the cruel Hands of the Papists.* On which words Dean *Bernard* makes this Comment.

*Now, howsoever I am as far from heeding of Prophecies this way as any, yet with me it is not improbable, that so great a Prophet, so sanctified from his youth, so knowing, and eminent throughout the universal Church, might have at some special times more than ordinary motions and impulses, in doing the Watchmans part, of giving warning of Judgments approaching.*

But doubtless the Spirit of that holy man, like just Lots righteous Soul, was grieved with the filthy conversation of the wicked; being well skilled in Di-

vine Astrology might prognosticate from Scripture Constellations, that a people, like those of *Laish*, who dwell careless, quiet and secure, when there is no Magistrate to put them to shame for the most scandalous provoking sins, Judg. 18. 1. Destruction was near when the iniquitys of the Amorites were at the full; the Deluge destroyed the old world, and were that faithful Watchman now alive, to behold a deluge of profess'd Prophaneness and Debauchery committed with a bold contempt of Gods and Mans Laws, to see men glory in actions Heathens are ashamed of, he would conclude the time of the fulfilling of his Prophecy was near, even at the doors.

But so obdurate were the *Irish* then against all that could be said or done to oblige them to peace, and so stupified were the *English* by their long peace, and great plenty, accompanied with grievous Debauchery, nothing could reclaim them, but the direfull Judgment of God executed on them by those *Irish Sabeans* and *Chaldeans*, or rather *Cannibals*; for the first did but spoil *Job* of his Goods, but these eat the Flesh and drunk the Blood of the *English*, in a metaphorical sense; as Psalm 14. 4. *Have the workers of iniquity no knowledge, who eat up my people as they eat bread?* these, as the Prophet complains, devoured *Israel* with open mouth, and drunk their Blood as sweet Wine.

So great delight and pleasure did they manifest in the miserable distresses and tortures they put the *English* under, no tongue can express the barbarous inhumane Cruelties committed by them on all Sexes,

Sexes, Degrees and Ages, that in a few months they destroyed (say soine) one hundred and fifty thousand, others, two hundred thousand Christians, many of whom knew not their right hand from the left, and most of them innocent naked people, in no capacity to resist, nor under the least suspicion of danger; many of them presuming upon their old intimate acquaintance, and long friendly neighbourhood amongst them, would not flee; concluding their late familiarity and mutual obligations of kindness could not so soon be forgotten, until they saw the Skean at their throats, and then they cryed out, as *Caesar* in the Senate House, *And thou my Son Brutus!* so, What thou my old Neighbour! thou my Gossip! thou my Foster Father, or Foster Brother! what thou my near Kinsman! &c. But so vehement was their rage, no former Allies nor Obligations would be remembred, nor no bowels moved; many who had been prevailed with to sit up all the night before carousing and drinking in Taverns and Ale-houses, where they had drank so many Healths to the Grandees they favoured, themselves were sick, or rather dead drunk, and were so murdered in the morning by the same Companions before they were capable of discerning who hurt them, or had time or sense to ask God forgiveness, their Barbarism extending to their Souls as well as to their Bodies, frequently refusing them time to say their Prayers, swearing they would send their Souls presently to the Devil; and such as, through the terror of sudden Death, would go to Mass, and promise to turn Papists, were presently

sently murdered, least they should recant, saying, they should dye while they were in a good mind.

An account of the particulars for the first three months of this dismal Tragedy is recorded by Sir **John Temple**, Master of the Rolls, and one of His Majesties most honourable Privy Council, a person so universally applauded for his Prudence, Gravity and Integrity, that the Truth of his History never was or ever will be questioned by any, but those whose works of darkness hate the light; a Book worth the chaining to every Churches Desk, and reading over once a year by every Family, to prevent that stupidity that is overgrowing the minds of too many Protestants, who are sucking in with greediness their debauch'd Principles in Morals, which so naturally blind the mind, they will easily, when it shall seem to be their interest, swallow down full cups of their Superstition, and close in with that Religion, where the most crying Sins of prophanie Swearing, beastly Drunkenness, and abominable Adulteries, &c. may be pardoned for inony, without either Repentance or Reformation, as is cited by the Author of the *Mystery of Jesuitisms* out of Father *Bauny Filcutius Sagundus Escobar*, and other of their Casuists. *Vide Letter 10. 137, &c.*

Now all this rage and barbarous cruelty could not proceed from inveterate malice and revenge against their persons; for they had not given any provocation, nor from any depravity in their Natures from principles of Humanity; for a more kind, affable, obliging humour'd people are not to be conversed with, than the generality of them, who have

have been educated amongst the *English*, or other ways well bred : they are capable of the highest improvements in all the liberal Sciences, and ingenious Arts ; that, as *Heylin* saith of them, *if good there is no better, if bad there can be no worse* ; but this cruelty proceeds from these two causes.

1. From the bloody Principles infused into them by their Priests, who persuaded them it was no more sin to kill a Heretick than a Dog or a Pig, nay to *sir J. T. p.* pluck a bone out of a Dogs mouth, Dog being the *78, 85, 87.* frequent Epithete they gave the *English* whilst murdering them, and this back'd with a persuasion it was not only innocent but meritorious to destroy them, in order to promote the Catholick Cause, & that they should receive a great share of that vast stock of Indulgences sent over by the Pope for their encouragement, blew their Catholick zeal into such a hellish flame, it put them into such an extasie of joy, they so strove who should most merit, they had no leisure to consider, those innocent *Abels* Bloods would cry to Heaven for vengeance against such cursed *Cains*.

2. As they were persuaded God would reward this labour, so were they confident it would never be in the power of man to punish them ; and that their opinion proceeded from the visible weakness of the *English* Interest, whereby they concluded the total extirpation of it was an easie work ; and observing the Herds, Flocks & Corn of the *English*, with the rich Furniture of many of their Houses, the present possession of which, if they had had no eternal Reward entail'd upon them, was a violent temptation

to a company of Beggers, who little before would have esteemed themselves very rich if they had but two Cows and four Goats of their own; for the Gentlemen who were Officers had their eyes upon the Lands, &c. they left the Plunder much to the Scologues and contented themselves to buy good bargains of them, and they that were confident of obtaining as much more before morning would sell good pennyworths over night, that in a few days thousands of wealthy Families that, as the Prophet saith, *were clothed in Scarlet embraced Dunghils*, had no other rayment to cover their nakednes but thum-ropes of straw, which these jovial Catholicks would fire in a frolick, expressing great pleasure in beholding how those desolate miserable Christians would frisk and fret, or at the best filthy rags thrown away by the *Irish* Beggers, whilst the Beggers themselves, like *Dives*, were well clothed *and fare* *deliciously every day*. But now let the Survivors of them sit down and cast up their accounts, did they gain by all this any thing but swift destruction and desolation? what the Sword spared the grievous Famine and dreadful Pestilence devoured, that within less than ten years after their delicious Feast they paid such a dismal Reckoning, they wished they had contented themselves with their own Commons.

About the years 1652, and 1653. the Plague and Famine had swept away whole Countrys, that a man might travel twenty or thirty miles, and not see a living creature, either Man, Beast or Bird, they being either all dead, or had quit those desolate pla-

ces, that our Souldiers would tell Stories of the place where they saw a Smoak, it was so rare to see either Smoak by day, or Fire or Candle by night, and when we did meet with two or three poor Cabbins, none but very aged men with women and children, and those, with the Prophet, might have complained, *we are become as a bottle in the smoak, our skin is black like an Oven, because of the terrible Famine.* I have seen those miserable creatures plucking stinking Carrion out of a Ditch black and rotten, and have been credibly informed they have digged Corps out of the Grave to eat; but the most tragical Story I ever heard was from an Officer commanding a Party of Horse, hunting for Tories in a dark night, discovered a Light, which they supposed to be a Fire which the Tories usually made in those waste Countries to dress their provision and warin themselves, but drawing near they found it a ruined Cabbin, and besetting it round, some did alight and peep in at the window, where they saw a great Fire of Wood, and a company of miserable old Women and Children sitting round about it, and betwixt them and the Fire a dead Corps lay broyling, which as the Fire roasted they cut off Collops and eat.

That doubtless the Vengeance of God was as severe upon that bloody Generation, as it was on Edom, Ezek. 25. 12. *Thus saith the Lord God, Because that Edom hath dealt against the House of Judah, by taking Vengeance, and hath greatly offended, and revenged himself upon them: 13. Therefore thus saith the Lord God, I will also stretch out mine Hand*

upon Edom, and will cut off Man and Beast from it, and I will make it desolate from Teman, and they of Dedan shall fall by the Sword. 14. And I will lay my vengeance upon Edom by the hand of my people Israel, and they shall do in Edom, according to mine anger, and according to my fury, and they shall know my vengeance, saith the Lord God.

And so sensible were the most sober and judicious amongst them of their misery, that about that time they approved this Notion of mine, that it is the Interest of the *Irish Papists of Ireland* to promote the strength of the *English Interest* there to that height, that may utterly cut off their hopes of ever withstanding it; they might be able to reject all tenders from abroad, and all encitements from their Jesuited Priests at home with this short answer, *Put us not upon impossibilities, and irrational desperate attempts*; we now quietly enjoy our Estates, Lives, & liberties of Religion, so far as can rationally be expected from a Prince of a different communion, with friendship from our *English Neighbours*, equal protection of the Laws for the peaceable enjoyment of our Estates, and encouragement to trade and planting, &c. And having been so often deluded by you, to the ruine of so many thousands of good Catholick Families, and the reproach of our Religion, we are resolved to run no more such ruining courses, after so many destructive disappointments, that we and our Ancestors have met with by dancing after your pipe. I say, were the *English Interest* so fortified, that all rationall hopes of extirpating it were removed, the *Irish* would be out of danger of being prevailed

prevailed with, to make such destructive attempts to themselves and posterities as they have formerly done: for although a considerable number of them may be of desperate fortunes, being Branches of those ruined Families sequestred for former Rebels, to whom War is the best Trade, and Revenge desireable Wages, if they gain nothing, they cannot lose much, but this is not the case of the body of them, there are many of their Nobility and Gentry enjoy plentiful Estates, with the favour and countenance of their Prince, some of whom never quitted the Interest of the Crown in the last 12 years War, and now reap the profit of it: and multitudes of the Commons are wealthy Merchants in our Cities, and rich Farmers in the Country, who although they be strict Papists, yet are friendly and good Neighbours, and just and honest Dealers, who have as much reason to dread a War as the *English* themselves when out of their Catholick Frenzy, at least on such desperate terms as a well fortified *English* Interest would render it.

I have discoursed many of them about this last *Irish* Plot, who have not only blamed but cursed their Priests, for a company of vagrant beggerly fellows, who having nothing to lose, nor any Families to provide for, would hazard the lives and fortunes of others that have both, who desire to be quiet; and that the Priests themselves are not all of a mind, nor act by the same rebellious Principles is manifest by the Discoveries some of them have made, and Evidence they have given against their own Primate *Plunket* and others lately.

Now

Now from these and the like considerations I argue, it is the Interest of the *Irish* Papists, that are in any tolerable state to live, to promote and strengthen the *English* interest amongst them to that height, that may render all attempts against it irrational and desperate; which would not only compose their minds to Peace and honest Industry, but discourage Foreigners from invading, when they had little hopes of Welcome or Aid from any of the Natives of Estates or Interest: this would in time wear off all the Jealousies, and remove all Animosities of both sides, that a weak and feeble *English* Interest in *Ireland* will continue and nourish: this would discourage Tories and Wood-Kirnes from robbing and harming the *English* Farmers, if the *Irish* Farmer were convinc'd it were equally their interest to discover and suppress them.

This would encourage the Natives to build and improve upon the Estates they have left, if they were convinc'd, that new Wars and troubles would hazard what they have, rather than restore them to more.

This would encourage the Tradesman and Farmer to their utmost Industry, when they could be assured, that what they thereby attained would be peaceably enjoyed by them and their posterities.

Nay, a potent *English* Interest would be a powerful motive to moderate and dispose the better tempered, and most thoughtful amongst them, to inquire into the Differences about Religion, when they find themselves out of danger of the *Romish* Clergies power, who now keep them in such awe,

they

they dare not read the Scripture, nor any Protestant Author, nor confer with any Protestant Minister, least the Priest hear of it, and enjoyn them severer penance than for Swearing, Whoring, &c. And from whence proceed this dread and awe, but from a supposition, it may be possible to retrieve the Popish Interest again, and then they would be subjected to the severe Discipline of the *Romish Clergy* for their Disobedience and *Apostacy*? and multitudes there are, both Papists and others, that would change a dangerous for a safe Religion, if they could be secured there were no danger in the change; for all Religion founded on humane Laws bind the Conscienses no longer than those Laws are in force: and as the Law is altered, so must the Religion, when the fear of man and self-safety, more than the love of Truth and desire to please God, is the motive to profess it.

And nothing is more evident, than that the Fear of God they have, is taught by the Precepts of Men; and therefore comes within the circuit of that vain Worship our Saviour rejects, *Matth. 15.9.* they cannot with *David* stand in aw of Gods Word, the Standard of all Divine Worship, and Rule of all humane Society; whilst they are prohibited the reading it, it may be well said of them, as Christ saith, *Matth. 22.29.* *Ye do err, not knowing the Scriptures:* if their Priests tell them, it is not only lawful, but meritorious, to destroy all Hereticks, yea Heretical Kings, &c. if it tend to promote the Catholick Cause, they must believe them, having never read, that *they that resist the Power resist the Ordinance*

*Ordinance of God, and they that resist receive to themselves damnation*: if their Priests affirm the Pope is suprem over all Princes and worldly Potentates, and hath power to excommunicate and de-throne one and set up another, and from thence all their Subjects are absolved from their Oaths of Allegiance, &c. they must believe it, having never read St. Peter, though claimed for their own peculiar Apostle, from whose pretended Supremacy they usurp theirs, who (as if he had foreseen the abuse they would put upon his Doctrine) more expressly declares the Supremacy in the Civil Magistrate than the other Apostles, in his first Epistle, ch. 2. v. 13. *Submit your selves to every Ordinance of Man for the Lords sake, whether it be to the King as Supream, or unto Governours, as unto them that are sent by him, &c.*

So St. Paul, as if he had foreseen the Apostacy of the Roman Church from their primitive Obedience to the Civil Magistrate, is more express in his Epistle to the Romans, chapt. 13. from the 1st to the 19th vers. than to any other Church he writes to, saith he, *Let every Soul be subject to the higher Powers: for there is no Power but of God. The Powers that be, are ordained of God. Whosoever therefore resisteth the Power, resisteth the Ordinance of God: and they that resist, shall receive to themselves Damnation*: So that the Pope and his Clergy must prove they are no Souls, before they can prove they are not bound by this Divine Canon: for every Soul is required to be subject.

Object.

Chap. Obj. in the provo nor are of a so of the ces, and often b Religi of their confide own thi sus, &c. Ans Rome, ship du that re and So mixed w der the of Conf dia, &c. sacres, may be made C nes Pi &c. be Wars in whereb ma, and Christia

*Object.* If it be as you say, that the *Irish* Papists in the last bloody Massacre were under no personal provocation to fill them with malice and revenge, nor are depraved in principles of Humanity, but are of a sociable, kind, friendly temper, and capable of the highest improvements in the liberal Sciences, and ingenious Arts; whence is it they have so often been treacherous and bloody, as their Histories declare? If you place all their Faults upon their Religion, you might do well to instance what Points of their Religion render them so dangerous, &c. considering they profess themselves Christians, and own the same God, and believe in the same Jesus, &c.

*Ans<sup>w</sup>.* It is not the Religion of the Church of *Rome*, viz. what properly relates to Faith and Worship due to God, but the Policies of the State of *Rome* that render them so incompatible with civil Order and Society; multitudes of Christians live safely mixed with *Turks* and *Pagans* in *Asia* and *Africa*, under the Governments of their respective Patriarchs, of *Constantinople*, *Alexandria*, *Antioch*, *Aethiopia*, *India*, &c. without any dread of Assassinations or Massacres, frequent in Popish Countries; of whom it may be said, as of *Manasseh* King of *Israel*, they have made Cities and Countries to swim with Blood, witness *Piedmont*, *Bohemiah*, *France*, *Ireland*, *Belgia*, &c. besides the multitudes destroyed by their unjust Wars in vindication of their usurped Supremacy, &c. whereby Christendom hath been made an Akeldima, and all this from Principles foreign to their own Christianity, and novel to their Church; as was believed

believed in *Gregory the Great* time, who exploded the Title of Supremacy, &c. as Antichristian; but I shall respite my more particular Answer to the Supplement at the end of this Treatise, whereto I refer all Answers to Objections, being not willing to interrupt the argumentative part, that it is the Interest of the *Irish* to promote the Prosperity of the *English* Protestants in *Ireland*.

And having hinted the miserable Desolation and Ruine a weak and feeble *English* Interest hath encouraged them to bring upon themselves and posterities, and the desperate hazards of an utter Extirpation, if they should attempt another Rebellion; and that an equal Prosperity with their *English* Neighbours they do and may enjoy, if they please. I shall close this Chapter with this Repetition, that if it be more their Interest to be in safety than in danger; to be in equal capacity of Honour and Trust from their Prince with his Protestant Subjects, than excluded; if it be their Interest to enjoy the Fruit of their Labours, and leave their Possessions and Wealth to their Children, rather than to have them possess'd by others; if it be their Interest to enjoy the hearty good Will and Respects from their Protestant Neighbours, rather than their Prejudice, arising from their Jealousie and Dread of being massacred, robbed and spoyle by them; in a word, if it be their Interest to secure to themselves and posterities a settled prosperous state, rather than to be subject to frequent ruine and destruction; then it is their Interest to promote the Prospe-

rity of the English Interest amongst them: for whilst that is weak and impotent, these things can never be, at best, not long continue, whilst there is a Pope, that can (not only pardon Rebels and Murderers, but also) approve and applaud the most barbarous actions as meritorious, or a Foreign Popish Prince to encourage and aid them, or a Jesuited Priest to instigate them to it.

If this be the present state of *Ireland*, that the English Interest there hath gained so much ground by the last Act of Settlement, &c. What now obstructs its progress to that strength and perfection you propose? *Vide Supplement.*

f f SECT.

## S E C T. II.

*Shewing that above all it is the Interest of the Protestants of Ireland to promote the potency of the English Interest in Ireland.*

IF it be not only the Interest of *England*, but of the Romanists of *Ireland* to promote the Prosperity and Potency of the *English* Interest, how much more is it the great Interest of all Protestants in *Ireland* by all lawful and possible means to do it? *England* is obliged more remotely, but the Protestants of *Ireland* more immediate; would you not see and feel the miseries of 1641. repeated? would you not see your Wives ravish'd, and Infants ript out of their Wombs, your Daughters deflowered, your innocent Babes barbarously murdere<sup>d</sup> before your eyes, your stately Buildings in a flame, your well improved and planted Estates all laid waste, your Princes Authority despised, and his Laws rejected, your Religion reproached and suppressed, as a pestilent Heresie? &c. I say, if these and the like dismal calamities be worth the avoiding, then let nothing in your power be omitted tending to the promotion and security of a potent *English* Interest, which nothing will so naturally

## Chap.2.      OF IRELAND.

rally effect as a vigorous propagation of Trade and Manufacture: it is not your building stately Houses, nor the draining, planting and stocking your Land with the best *English* Corn and Cattle, &c. will do it, your 41. Experience may convince you, all that may be immediately surprised and destroyed by your Enemies, and put them in a capacity to maintain a destructive War against you, but the well planting our Wall Towns, and erecting them where they are wanting, and keeping them in a posture of defence by their own Militia's, which will be ready Receptacles to the *English* Families dispersed in the Country adjacent, and by the aid of the Country Militia's able to embody against an Enemy, that would fortifie the *English* Interest; and this may be easily effected, without much charge to the King or Country, by propagating Manufactures, as I shew at large in that Treatise.

The second Expedient is to procure Laws against single Life, enjoyning all *English* Protestants to marry, the Males before the age of 25. and Females before the age of 22. or from that time to pay a yearly penalty by Statute, to be presented by the Grand Juries, and limited by the Discretion of the Bench not exceeding the eighth part of their visible Incomes, to be employed towards the maintenance of poor Orphans.

1. This would somewhat restrain these abominable Fornications and Adulteries, so frequent, if we would take St. Pauls counsel, *Let every*

## The Interest

Man have his own Wife, and every Woman her own Husband, &c. other mens Wives would not be so often debauched, nor our Parishes so charged with Bastards.

2. This would much increase an *English* Breed for the Countries Defence, as I elsewhere shew, ten of whom are worth twenty bred and brought up in *England*.

The neglect hereof gives the *Irish* a great advantage, who are generally more fruitful, and besides inure their Children more to hardness in their Nursings, from whence they generally live; whereas our nice *English* Women destroy their Children by too tender Nursing, &c. that if they live, many of them are good for little, but to make Carpet-Knights on, though they do retain Spirit and Courage, yet their Bodies are so inured to tenderness and delicacy, the hardships of Winter War would kill more than the Sword.

3. This would much tend to the planting our Towns: for single persons content themselves with a Room in another's House; and Marriage would necessitate them to become House-keepers, and Families would require their Industry to maintain, but while single they live idly, if not debauchedly.

And in order to encourage the meaner sort to marry, to countenance that ancient *English* Custom of Bridals, wherein every person not receiving Alms in the Parish brings in something, according to their ability, towards the young Couples Housekeeping, to the great encouragement

## Chap. 2.      of IRELAND.

ment of painful industrious young people; and obligeth them, whilst single, to be the better Labourers and Servants, that their honest Reports might increase their Bridals.

And further, that a provision be made, where Parents are not able to dispose of their Children to honest Trades, to put them out Apprentices on the Country Charge, which would much tend to the planting of our walled Towns, and promoting the Manufactures, as I shew at large in that Treatise.

But that which would, above all other Expedients, tend to the strengthening the *English* Interest would be, to endeavour a right understanding and charitable Union betwixt all sober pious Protestants in matters of Religion, the want thereof increaseth groundless Jealousies of each other, and strengtheneth the Confidence of the common Enemy to the Protestant Interest, that they are easily run down, as in the Massacre 1641. they at first declared their displeasure was only against the Puritannical party, and then only the *English*, not the *Scots*: but, I suppose, I need not inform you how soon all Protestants became the equall objects of their Fury and barbarous Cruelty.

Therefore by *English* Protestants I mean all that are not Papists, and agree with the Religion established by Law in all its Fundamentals, nay in all its Substantials, that believe the same Creed, and make the same Translation of the Scriptures their Rule of Faith and Manners; and no people

can be esteemed of a different Religion, that agree in what is *Jure Divino*; though they differ in some things that are *Jure Humano*. Although they may scruple external Communion with some particular Churches, yet if they retain internal Communion with the universal Catholick Church in all parts of the world, they are no Schismatics.

**Bishop Brambells Vindication of the Church of England, pag. 14, 15.** Saith a reverend Prelate, *The Communion of the Christian Catholick Church is partly internal, partly external; the internal Communion consists principally in these things, to believe the same entire substance of saving necessary Truth revealed by the Apostles, and to be ready implicitly in the preparation of the Mind to embrace all other supernatural Verities when they shall be sufficiently proposed to them, to judge charitably one of another, to exclude none from the Catholick Comunion and hope of Salvation, either Eastern, or Western, or Southern, or Northern Christians, which profess the antient Faith of the Apostles and primitive Fathers, established in the first general Councils, and comprehended in the Apostolick, Nicene and Athanasian Creed, to rejoice at their well-doing; to sorrow for their Sins, to condole with them in their sufferings, to pray for their constant perseverance in the true Christian Faith, for their Reduction from all their respective Errors, and their re-union to the Church in case they be divided from it, that we may be all one Sheepfold under that one great Shepherd and Bishop of our Souls: and lastly, to hold an actual external Communion with them in votis,*

## Chap. 2. OF IRELAND.

votis, in our desires, and do endeavour it by all those means which are in our power. This internal Communion is of absolute necessity among all Catholicks, p. 16.

But, saith he, there is not the like degree of obligation to an exact Communion in all externals, there is not so great a Conformity to be expected in Ceremonies, as in the Essentials of Sacraments, &c. in the Explication of Articles of Faith, as in the Articles themselves, nor in the Superstructures as in Fundamentals, &c. p. 17. nor in Scholastical Opinions as in Catechistical Grounds, nor to Ecclesiastical Constitutions as to Divine Ordinances, not such a strict adherence to a particular Church as to the universal.

So in his Answer to the Bishop of Chalcedon, Essentials must not be pressed too far, least we draw out Blood in stead of Milk, &c. it doth not follow, because true Faith is essential, therefore every point of true Faith is essential; or because Discipline is essential, therefore every part of right Discipline is essential; or because Sacraments are essential, therefore every lawful Rite is essential, p. 4. Whatsoever toucheth not the Heart of Religion is not Schism, p. 8.

Saith my reverend Author, 'Tis a preposterous zeal, like Hell, hot without Light, that makes different Opinions different Religions, in his Answer to S. W. p. 40.

Who please to read this learned Author in point of Schism will find, that he differs from those fiery Zealots, that dare affirm Schism to be a greater Sin than profane Swearing, Drunkenness, or

Whoring, &c. but by the same rule they like the Religion of *Bellarmino, Suarez, Vasquez, &c.* (for they say so) better than Bishop *Hall, Sanderson, Usher, Bramhall or Taylor*; for not only they, but all the pious Divines I have read of the Church of *England* are of another Opinon; most of the sober Dissenters in *Ireland* will submit their Cause to be weighed in these Protestant Scales, and own themselves for Schismaticks if their Character condemn them: and it is required by the Divine Law, *Lev. 19. 36. Deu. 25. 15.* that all men buy and sell by the same Weights and Scales: divers Weights and Ballances are abomination to the Lord, *Prov. 11. 1. 20. 10.*

But neither the Numbers nor the Parts of this sort of Antischismaticks are so considerable, but our Quakers, Muckletonians, &c. may match them; who will extend Idolatry, Popery, Superstition and carnal Worship as far beyond their due bounds, &c. as they do criminal Schism; that I shall leave them to agree upon the invisible Evidence of their unscriptural Principles, and only plead for a charitable Union betwixt the sober and pious of both parties.

And as they agree in all essential positives, the same Creed, the same Scriptures, the same Sacraments, &c. so in all reforming negatives they protest against all Popish Errors, either relating to Faith or Worship, contained in the first Protestantation of the *German* Churches, or is since protested against by any of the Protestant Churches in the world, and that with more vehemency, which makes

Chap.2.      **of IRELAND.**

makes them not the less Protestants.

They protest against all the old Heresies of the *Arrians, Socinians, Gnosticks, Nestorians, &c.* so that both in positives and negatives the difference is little in Substantials betwixt Dissenters and the Protestant Church of *England*: they maintain not only internal Communion with the universal Catholic Church, but internal and external with the Protestant Church of *England*.

They do not only make the same Scriptures the standard of Faith, Worship and Manners, but highly esteem of, and bless God for, the many famous Lights the Church of *England* hath produc'd, for the propagating Gospel Principles, and converting Souls to Christ; they put the highest value on their learned Writings, next to the sacred Scriptures, and esteem their Expositions, Annotations, &c. the most Orthodox in the world; they retain a venerable memory of all her Confessors and blessed Martyrs, and are ready, if God call them to it, to seal the Truths they dyed for with their dearest Blod; they bless God for, and heartily rejoice in, all her learned and pious Bishops and Ministers, that now are, and daily pray that God would increase their Numbers and bless their Labours in his Work, and grieve for all the Reproach and Dishonour brought upon the Church by ignorant and scandalous Ministers, &c. they agree with the Church at least in 36 of the 39 Articles, and are therefore doubtless of the same Religion. The Jews had their several Sects, as the Pharisees, the Sadduces, the Herodians,

ans, *Effins, &c.* but were all owned as *Israelites*, if they adhered to the Law of *Moses* and the Prophets, notwithstanding their Interpretation and Observation in some things of weight were different.

Some of the *German* Protestant Princes are *Lutherans*, and others are *Calvinists*, and their Subjects mix'd in their Dominions of both Persuasions: yet they own each other for Protestants, the *Lutheran* Princes have the same confidence in their *Calvinist* Subjects as in their *Lutheran*; and the like on the other hand, they all firmly unite to aid and assist their respective Princes against their Popish Adversaries, if National Interest interpose not; whereby the Protestant Interest in *Germany* becomes formidable, and potent: and yet the difference in Opinion betwixt the *Lutherans* and *Calvinists* is far greater than the difference betwixt *English* Protestants and the generality of Dissenters.

The Papists themselves, who glory much in their Unity, have their *Jansenists*, *Dominicans*, *Molenists*, *Jesuits*, *Scotists*, and several Orders, whose Differences are more momentary by far than any of ours, some of them even to the shaking of the bottom of their very Faith, as might be evidenced in their disputes about the Subject of Infallibility, some placing it in a Council, as the Councils of *Basil* and *Constance*, others in the Pope, as the Councils of *Lateran* and *Trent*, some in both; yet they own each other of one Religion. Dr. *Willet* in his *Synopsis* fol. 1325 to 1352 incerts 307 Controversies

Chap. 2. **OF IRELAND.**

roversies amongst the Papists, many of them repeated by Dr. *Stillingfleet*, vid. his *Divisions of the Romish Church*, from pag. 353 to 471. And as they have these many distinct Sects maintaining contrary Opinions amongst their Clergy and Votaries; so betwixt the Clergy and Laity, as is at large asserted by Bishop *Taylors Disswasive from Popery*, Bishop *Jewel*, and Dr. *Stillingfleet* ch. 4, and 5. and the *History of the Council of Trent*, fol. 33, 39. 44. wherein you may read the bitter Contests about Ecclesiastical Power and Jurisdiction betwixt Pope and Pope, the Popes and the Emperors of *Germany*, Kings of *Spain*, *France*, *Portingal*, States of *Venice*, *Italian Princes* and *States*, &c. producing bloody Wars, &c. and yet were all esteemed *Roman Catholicks*.

But admit this were not the case, but the Dissenters were as opposite in Principle and Interest to the Protestant Church as the Papists, that they esteemed them all damn'd Hereticks, and their Religion a pestilent Heresie, and that it were not only lawful but meritorious by all possible means, whether by War, Massacres or Assassinations, to destroy them, as the Enemies of God and holy Church; yet they could not be dangerous to the Common-wealth, because of the paucity of their Numbers, and Indepency of their Interest: if the Papists were as few in number, and had as few Noblemen and persons of Interest to head them, and no Foreign aid to back them, more potent, nor neerer than *Maryland*, all men would esteem it ridiculous for the State to maintain a po-  
tent

tent Army to secure the Interest of the Crown against them, or to observe the Protestants in dread of being destroyed by them, especially if this small number of Papists were so far divided in their Opinions, there were no probability of their ever agreeing which Faction should sway the Scepter, having no Family or person that made the least pretence to a right of Sovereignty : I say, if this were the case we should laugh at persons dreading Popish Plots and Rebellions, as we do at our little Children when they point to their own Shadows, and cry a Bug-a-bo ! and yet this is the best capacity the Dissenters of *Ireland* are in to disturb the State : and if so, surely those Watchmen are blind of one eye, at least, that warn the State to beware of Puritans, &c. as more dangerous than Papists : For, admit Dissenters were persons of dangerous Principles & considerable Interest, there are few of them of despicable Fortunes, the poorest of them by their painfulnes in their Callings and frugality have Bread to eat, and Rayment to put on, and most of them live comfortably by their Industry ; and some of them enjoy plentiful Estates by Title from the Crown, whereby they are equally engaged with others to preserve the Peace, and support the Interest of it, until their case be as desperate as blind Sampsons, when he pull'd down the House on his own head to be revenged on the *Philistines* for his two Eyes, I see no reason they should be esteemed dangerous to the Peace of *Ireland* ; but rather a great additional strength both to Church and State, both against Foreign

Chap  
Forei  
own  
reign  
the L  
Alleg  
for W  
swers  
dent  
the S  
ces,  
wards  
on o  
soeve  
been  
ing T  
of th  
1. I  
cuted  
these  
1. S  
supp  
by Pr  
been  
since  
2. a  
and i  
sente  
from  
not g  
Alleg  
of H  
high

Foreign Invasions and intestine Rebellions; they own no Government nor Jurisdiction that is foreign, nor any other but that which the Laws of the Land have established, to which they have sworn Allegiance, and are and will be subject not only for Wrath but for Conscience sake, so far as answers the great end of Government: few prudent Statesmen but will judge it is the Interest of the State of *Ireland*, considering its circumstances, not only to continue their Indulgence towards those they have, but to declare a Toleration of all Protestants of what Nation or Opinion soever principled, as before is declared, which has been the Practice of all Princes and States courting Trade; as I shew at large in the the *Chapter of the Policies of Trade*.

I never read of any Prince or State that persecuted their dissenting Subjects, but from one of these considerations.

1. From Conscience, to propagate Truth and suppress Error; but this way of converting Souls by Prison, Banishments and Death I read not hath been much in use with Protestant Princes or States since the Reformation.

2. Or Jealousie of the Safety of their Interest, and in this case it is irrational, for any sort of Dissenters, Papists or others, to expect Protection from that Prince, or State, to whom they will not give the best Security in their power of their Allegiance and peaceable deportment. The States of *Holland* and *New England*, who pretend the highest to Liberty, exact it: and it is a Principle

ciple in Nature for every Being to provide for its own safty, much more for that Being on whose safety all others depend.

Therefore it is not only the Duty but the Interest of all Dissenters, not only to give the utmost security for their Loyalty in their power, but to avoid all occasions of appearing engaged in any Faction that may happen in the State: for though the matters controverted be only of a civil nature, and have no tendency to Religion, but rather the safety of the State, and Honor of the Prince; yet that side Dissenters shall generally appear for will be reflected on by Churchmen, if not by Statesmen, to design some Faction against the Government; that were I to choose a Parliament man, or a Magistrate of a City, &c. I would neither give my Vote for a Dissenter, nor for a prophane debauched Conformist, if there were a sober, pious, good Church man to be had.

2. As Dissenters in prudence ought to be of no Faction in a State, so to avoid all manner of just provocations toward the Governors, whilst they enjoy the liberty of worshipping God in the way their own Consciences dictate, it is not reasonable they should expect the liberty of reflecting on that Religion the Law of the Land establishes, by which they are indulged: there is little ground to believe any of the godly persons we read of, as *Joseph* and *Moses* in Pharaohs Court, good *Obadiah* in wicked *Ahab*, *Daniel*, *Nehemiah* and the three worthies, &c. in Babylon, the Christians in Cesars Household

did

did carry themselves offensively towards their fellow Courtiers, much less towards their Princes they served, though most of them Pagans: it is not rational to suppose any of those good men reprobred or censured the Religion of their Princes publickly: but it is manifest they made a publick profession of their own, and more vehemently when it was most dangerous so to do; as *Daniel* when the King published his Decree, *Chapt. 6.* and *Obadiah* when by the instigation of *Jesabel Ahab* persecuted the Prophets, and *Mordecai* and *Esther* when *Hammon* contrived the destruction of the Jews: but whilst they were permitted quietly to enjoy their own Worship, I do not find they either writ or spoke against the Religion of the Country they were in: and *St. Paul* disapproves it, being accused by *Tertullus* the Orator before *Felix* for a mover of Sedition, and prophaning the Temple, &c. *Acts 24. 6.* he denies the Charge, v. 12. *faith he they neither found me in the Temple disputing with any man, neither raising up the people, neither in the Synagogue, nor in the City, &c.* but this I confess (saith he) by the way they call Heresie, so worship I the God of my Fathers, v. 14. that is, I meddle not with their Religion, nor matters of State, but practice my own, I only preach the Gospel of Peace and walk as becomes it: so in his second Arraignment before *Festus*, *chap. 25.* *chap. 18.* he makes his defence thus, *neither against the Law of the Jews, neither against the Temple, nor yet against Cesar have I offended any thing at all, &c.*

Now

Now if these things had not been faults St. Paul would not have endeavoured to vindicate, but rather have justified himself; he was no time-server nor man-pleaser, *1 Thess. 2. 4.*

So in his third Arraignment before *Agrrippa*, *chap. 26.* how humbly and condescendingly did he express himself, as before to the other two, and when the King told him, *too much Learning made him mad*, *v. 24.* or a Fanatick, he humbly replied, *I am not mad, most noble Festus, but speak the words of truth and soberness.*

Now if these things be written for our learning, how unlike it is, the spirit and behaviour of such Christians under sufferings for Conscience sake, that think they can never bear a faithful Testimony, except they do it stubbornly and rudely? therefore let Dissenters, who wish well to the common Protestant Interest, be cautious whilst they pres after Gospel Purity they break not the bonds of Gospel Unity; and whilst they seperate from what they judge humane, to be wary, they reject not what will prove divine Worship, though there may be a just and pious Separation, as *Bishop Bramhall* (before cited) delares.

Yet there may be also a sinful Schism, as every particular Sect allows, when it is from themselves; and an Error in Schism will be found a greater Sin when it proceeds from Pride of mind and Self-conceitednes, than an Error in Conformity when it proceeds from Charity and a godly fear of sinning on the other hand.

There-

Therefore it is safest to separate from things rather than persons or Churches, to own every Church so far as they own the Truth, and only separate from what is in your Consciences manifest Error and Superstition, Bish. Bramhall p. 271.

Go as far as upright Conscience will give leave to manifest a love to Union and an hatred of Division; and that it may appear you separate not through Stubbornness and Faction, but singly to maintain a good Conscience towards God, and that with all Christian Charity and Humility towards others, especially your Superiors: this would suit with St Peters Advice *to be ready always to give an account to every man of the hope that is in you with meekness and fear, 1 Pet. 3. 15.* and secure you from suffering as evil doers and busie bodys, &c. for it is better, if the will of God be, that you suffer for well doing than for evil doing, saith St. Peter 1 Epistle 3. 17.

If I be censured for this part of my Discourse by the peevish and censorious of both sides, for a Digression from a Subject of promoting Trade and Wealth; yet when the more moderate and judicious consider the influence of our Divisions and Jealousies fomented by rigid uncharitable persons of both parties, they will vindicate me, and allow that the uniting of Interest in point of Religion, so far as to beget a mutual confidence in each others Integrity to the common Protestant Cause, will tend much to the strengthening the hands of our Protestant Governors; and also remove Jealousies, and beget a satisfaction betwixt

Assenters and Dissenters that they will never be dangerous one to another: and till this be obtained I see no ground to expect the Protestant Interest of *Ireland* can ever be potent, nor ever flourish in Trade and Wealth, for these Reasons.

1. The common Enemy to our common Religion and civil Interest will still be hoping the Divisions amongst our selves will at last open a door for them to destroy us all; and that expectation deters them from that Industry in Manufactory and Traffick, which otherwise, for present profit sake, they would more vigilantly promote, and the more moderate of them joyn Interest with the united Protestants in preserving our common Peace.

2. No greater Discouragements can lye in the way of foreign Manufacturers, and Merchants coming to settle amongst us, than suspicion our Divisions should cause a disturbance of the Peace; which the least apprehensive must discern would be an evident ruine to the whole, and consequently to themselves, if they should settle with us.

3. Nothing more disheartens the *English* from engaging in such Manufacturies and Trade as would fix their Estates on a spot they could not remove from, than a sense of danger from our Divisions, lest some particular Dissentors or Sect should so misbehave themselves towards the Government, as to provoke them to put a general Restraint upon the Liberties of the whole, and thereby necessitate them to quit the Country, and so lose all their Improvements.

I might

Chap. 2. 25  
**OF IRELAND.**

I might multiply particulars to manifest the Damage our Jealousies and Animosities on the account of our **Divisions in Religion** threaten, and the great **Advantages** a charitable Union would produce to the security and prosperity of the common *English Interest of Ireland*.

But being satisfied all moderate and charitable Christians are of the same opinion, I shall submit what I have offer'd to their Judgment; and howsoever I am censured for this weak *Essay*, I shall comfort my self in the Integrity of my heart to the common **Welfare of the Protestant Interest of Ireland** and submit the Blessing to God.

---

**CHAP.**

## C H A P. III.

*The third Expedient to recover the languishing state of Ireland in its Trade and Wealth is, to assert Irelands Interest in its own Government.*

**T**HAT it is not only the Interest of *Ireland*, but of the Crown and Realm of *England*, that *Ireland* be governed by its own members, or persons peculiarly interested in its prosperity, is manifest.

Although it will be granted to be *Irelands* great advantage, to have not only their Lord Lieutenants but most other Ministers of State sent from *England*, provided they then purchase, plant, and settle themselves and Families in the Country ; for no other Expedient will advance the Prosperity, and strengthen the *English* Interest in *Ireland* like it : for if the Noble and Worshipful Families of *Ireland* would examine the original of their first Ancestors in that Kingdom, few would be found that came over on purpose to purchase or plant, but rather encouraged to transport themselves for the sake of publick Imploys, either Civil or Military ; but most by the later: every new Rebellion called over new Troops and Companies, to strengthen the standing Army to suppress it ; and at the end of every War were garrison'd and quarter'd in those Countreys, where the Insurrection was first raised, or had been most powerful, and in places most con-

convenient to secure the future peace, where they obtain'd Grants of forfeited Lands, and from thence after some time of settlement of themselves and Familys, their Soldiers would marry, and take Farms, or set up Trades, and so ere<sup>t</sup> English Plantations in the most dangerous *Irish Countries*, where none but Souldiers with their Swords in their hands, or others under their shelter durst adventure to plant.

Therefore it was a rational project at the end of the last War, in order to promote the *English Plantations*.

1. In the disbanding part of that Army, to pitch upon such Troops and Companies as were best acquainted with the Country, and most likely to plant their Lots; and then to give some of them peculiar advantages by select places for their encouragement, whereby many of the reduc'ted Troops and Companies had the advantage of the standing Army, who were confin'd to their Lots.

2. To contrive the planting of the Country by the standing Army, by instructing the Officers to encourage their Souldiers to marry, and plant about their Garrisons, and Quarters, especially if Tradesmen, and past their middle age: and then once in 2 or 3 years to change their Quarters at a good distance from the place; whereupon the married Souldiers that had settled their Familys would petition to be dismiss'd, which much increas'd English Plantations, who for their encouragement were continued in Muster six months Duty free: and whilst Pay is to be had a General shall never want Souldiers, and young beardless Lads that have nothing to care for,

but to keep their Arms fixed, and their Knap-sacks furnished, are the best Souldiers for a Field-Army, and so esteemed by all Authors I have read: and whilst a Troop or Company retains one half old Souldiers, *viz.* File-leaders, Half File-leaders and Bringers up, the young Souldiers will do as well as others to fill up Files, and after a few months careful Exercise will be as ready for any Service, and perform their parts equal with the rest: for though Experience and Skill is necessary in Officers, yet Courage and Subjection are the more necessary Qualifications in private Souldiers; which none like the young stripling, who is lately come from under the severer Discipline of Family Government, to whom Military Discipline seems easie: and these having no Wives nor Children to cry after them, &c. are the freest from care, and consequently the readiest at the Beat of the Drum to march where and whensoever they are commanded.

The neglect of this was the ruine of the *English* Interest the last Rebellion, the standing Troops and Companies consisting much of the Officers Tenants, &c. could not be drawn together at short warning, without exposing their Families and concerns to the merciless mercy of the Enemy; whereas had they been qualified as beforementioned, the King might have had a marching Army, and the Country a standing Militia consisting of the same Inhabitants, march'd from them in the Kings Pay, to have stood by them, and defended them, at least, against the small parties of straggling Cut-throats, by whom the greatest number of the naked

naked *English* were massacred: therefore it is the Interest of this Kingdom, it should be penal in the Officers of the Army to inlist and muster any of the settled Inhabitants capable of serving in the Militia; for thereby the Country is weakned in its Military strength, and the King disappointed of a marching Army: whereas were all persons thus qualified disbanded, and the Officers prohibited listing such, without special License from the General, you would soon have the Foot Companies filled with young brisk Lads, who would throng out of *England* for Entertainment, which would more tend to increase and strengthen the *English* Interest in *Ireland* than any other Expedient that can be proposed.

As it is the Interest of *Ireland* to give encouragement to *English* Protestants to come and enjoy Military Imployments and Preferments among them; so is it the same for Civil and Ecclesiastical Imployments, provided still they settle and abide with us.

But that which is the Grievance of this Kingdom is, that either Military or Civil Imployments should be enjoyed by Nonresidents, or otherwise persons who only come over to enjoy the Profit of their Office, and so soon as they have received what Benefit it affords, to return for *England*, and carry their Gains with them; of which sort, *Ireland* has most suffered by *English* Chief Governours, and *English* Farmers and Commissioners of the Revenue, and their Attendants and Dependants coming and returning with them; the Damage sustained

by this Kingdom in the period of 15 years thereby is computed in the Chapter of *Irelands* involuntary Charge and Expence.

And that which I shall further endeavour to demonstrate is, that it is not only its damage in respect of the Charge *Ireland* sustains, but many other ways inconvenient and prejudicial.

1. For the chief Governour, though there might be some reason of State in times past, why they should not only be of *English* Blood, but *English* by Birth and Interest; yet the case is altered now: and the Act of Parliament in the 10th. of Hen. 7th. that none but such as were born in the Realm of *England* should be Constables of the Castles of *Dublin*, *Trim*, *Athlone*, *Leislipe*, *Carlingford*, *Wicklow*, &c. had no respect to the civil & politick Government, but the Execution of penal Laws upon Offenders, those Castles being made use of as Prisons to secure dangerous persons in, which is declared in the body of the Statute, viz. **W**hich Castles have been negligently kept/ and such as have been committed to the Constables or Keepers of them for *Treason*/ *Felony*/ &c. suffered to escape wilfully/to the great prejudice of our **S**overeign **L**ord/ and of all the said **L**and; **t**herefore be it ordained and enacted/ &c. so that other Act 23d. of Hen. 8th. to regulate the Election of the chief Governour, by the Council on the death of the Lord Lieutenant, &c. until the Kings pleasure was known, did not respect preferring *English* by Birth before *English* by Blood; but to secure the Sword from unfit Hands, who by their power.

powerful Interest might awe their own Election, and be mischievous before the King could declare his pleasure; as appears by the said Act \*, as fol- \* *Irish* loweth; **The said Counsellours habe full stat. fol. Power and Authority bp vertue of this 214. 215.** Act/ to elect and chuse one such person as shall be an Englishman, and boyn within the Realm of England, being no spiritual person/ to be Justice/ and Governoz of this Realm of Ireland, during the Kings High- ness Pleasure / if there shall be at that time any such person within this Realm/ &c. if not/ then to elect and chuse two per- sons of the said Council of English Blood and Sirname/ being no spiritual person/ &c. which I cite to refute that vulgar Error, that the Lord Lieutenant, &c. must be born in *England*, be- cause otherwise he is not capable of governing in the Castle of *Dublin*; whereas the Office of Constable is a distinct inferior thing from the Governor of the Castle: but whatever reason of State former times might have, the case is otherwise now: for, as it is shewn in the Chapter of *Englands Interest in Irelands Prosperity*, the state of the *English* Interest in *Ireland* is changed, from a weak infirm state, that needed Physick, to a strong healthful state, that on- ly requires Food; the Propriety of Lands, the Plan- tation of Cities and strong Towns inhabited and governed by *English*, the Countries so planted with *English*, as all our High Sheriffs, Justices of the Peace, &c. all *English*, and the *English* Laws are duely and equally in all parts executed

by English Judges and Officers &c. the majority of both Houses of Parliament English, all which was never the case of *Ireland* before ; that *Ireland* now needs nothing but diligent Endeavours to corroborate and improve its advantages, which none but such who are acquainted with its Humour and Constitution, and thoroughly interested in its prosperity are capable of, for these reasons.

1. Being unacquainted with intelligent persons of the several Parties, they cannot understand the various and different Humours and Interests of the people : indeed if the Inhabitants were all *Irish Papists*, or all *English Protestants*, or were these two grand parties of entire Interest among themselves, their work were more easie ; but as they have each their grand Interest and bond of Friendship ; the Papists the Interest of their Church, by whose aid and countenance they expect their Succour ; and the Protestants the Interest of their Prince, by whose Authority and Favour they enjoy all they possess : yet they have each amongst themselves their different and peculiar Interests, both Religious and Civil ; as I shall after shew.

And a Chief Governcour unacquainted with persons and things will find it difficult work to carry himself to the equal satisfaction of all parties, with Security to the Government, and Incouragement of Trade, &c.

2. The short continuance, sometimes two, sometimes three years, rarely four ; we had three in less than eight years, viz. from the Lord *Roberts* entring *September 18th. 1669.* to the Earl of *Essex*'s sur-

render

render August 24th. 1677. so that by that time they understand their Work, they are called from it: saith Borlacy, *The vicissitude of Governours hath been observed (by some) to be exceeding prejudicial to the publick; private Respects often introducing notable things in the State, according to their Interests who governed, not the publicks, diversi Imperatoribus mores, diversa fuere studia, sometimes to the degenerating of the old English into the Irish customs, through their negligence, and indulgence, other times to the alienating the Irish by their severity, from the benefit of a well tempered and orderly Government, both equally destructive to the Prince. And yet too long a Residence in so eminent a Place may over-heat a great Spirit, if not bounded with excellent Principles. Whence the Romans (those great Masters of Government) rarely admitted their Vicegerents to brood on a Province, that their Continuance there might not increase Self-interest.*

The longest time any continued in this Government (how honourable soever) was never made up with Happiness suitable to the anxiety of their Mind and Body: Sir Henry Sidney (who left as clear a Fame as any man that enjoyed the Place) parted with it with the words of the Psalmist, *When Israel came out of Egypt, and the House of Jacob from a people of a strange Language, Judah was his Sanctuary, and Israel his Dominion; intimating how little satisfaction could be took in so slippery a Place, amongst such a people, whose Language he knew not, and variety of Interests; though the most that have miscarried there, have fallen through other*

mens Interest rather than their own failing.

And I judge the three last Noble persons sent out of *England* to govern *Ireland* will set to their Seals, that it is not a short and easie work to understand their Humour and Interest; none of them could please all, and others of them very few; although they were persons of eminent Parts and great Integrity, both to the Crown and *English* Interest: yet the Interest of our Trade and Manufactures so withered under their Shadow, that they languish to this day; of fourteen hopeful Manufactures they found thriving, they left but the stumps of one standing; which hath put such a Damp upon the hopes of Success, none have attempted either to erect new, or revive the old since.

2. They oft come with a prepossession of the danger of *Irelands* encroaching upon the Trade and Wealth of *England*, and from thence rather fear than design *Irelands* prosperity in Trade; and what our chief Governor fears we have little ground to hope for.

3. As the proverb is, New Lords, new Laws; so new Governors, new Councils; it is to be observed the Successor very rarely elects the Favourites of his Predecessor to be his Confidents; and then that natural Emulation the Heart of man is addicted to diverts them from building on Foundations laid by others; whereby some publick undertakings after a hopeful progress have miscarried, to the great discouragement of future Attempts;

tempts; as several notable Instances might be given if it were convenient.

4. By reason of their immediate Relation to, and probable sudden Return for, *England*, they are most concerned so to manage the Affairs of *Ireland*, as may consist with the present advantage of their Credit in *England*. Now though we honour a Lover of our Country, as being *Englishmen* our selves, and glory in its Honour and Wealth, as younger Branches in the Honour and Wealth of the elder House of their Family; yet we may expect a younger Brothers Portion; and to be trusted with the Conduct of our own Estates, in Subjection to our politick Father; and not under the Tutelage of our elder Brother: When *Abraham* sent his Sons he had by *Keturah* from *Isaac* Eastward, and gave them Portions, he left them to manage their own Affairs.

We do not read that ever the Sons of *Isaac* or *Jacob* were entrusted with the Affairs of the Children of *Ishmael* and *Esau*, though they enjoyed the Birthright and Blessing; and it is none of the least Discouragements to *English* Gentlemen, that have great Estates in *Ireland*, from coming to live upon them, than that by quitting their Dwellings in *England*, they quit their Priviledge as *Englishmen*, both in respect to their Liberty of Traffick to several parts of the World, which they before enjoyed, and also their Interest in *Magna Charta*, of being tryed

being tried for their Lives and Estates by a Jury of known honest men of their Neighbourhood: whereas Noblemen or Gentlemen of *Ireland* may be impeached in *England*, sent for over in custody, and there arraigned before Judges, put upon their Tryal by Jurors, whose Faces they never saw before, and unto whom they are altogether unknown, further than the Evidence then given in Court describes them, which is an Issue few would be pleased with when it comes to be their own case; especially considering the moral impossibility for persons of ordinary Estates to bear the Charge, and of small Interest to prevail with necessary Witnesses, &c. to go from *Ireland* to *England*, to give their Testimony in their behalf; and to imagine that either Judges or Jurors of *England* can be equally concern'd to suppress Treason, and Sedition, tending to the disturbance of the Peace and Safety of the *English* Interest in *Ireland*, with *English* Judges and Jurors of *Ireland*, appears very improbable, to such as admit Self-safety is a stronger motive to all people than Neighbors welfare: and though *England* may be grieved to hear of *Ireland's* Troubles, yet the *English* in *Ireland* must certainly more sensibly feel the Misery that befalls themselves. A Merchant on shoar may be grieved to behold a Ship (wherein he hath some Adventure) sinking by a violent storm at Sea; but the Merchants and Mariners aboard, that see no way to escape from perishing with her, must be under a different consternation; which represents the true state of the different case.

2. As there is much Reason of State against Irelands being governed by Foreigners to its peculiar Interest ; so have we many Presidents, both ancient and modern, of Sovereign Princes governing their Tributary Provinces by their own Countrymen ; the King of *Spain* discerning the *Genoua's* were discontented at his governing them by *Spaniards*, &c. and impatient for a King of *Naples* and Duke of *Milan* born in *Italy*; to secure his Interest without that hazard , he borrowed of them vast Sums of Mony, they being great Usurers, designing thereby to keep them in awe, lest they should lose their Mony ; so the Kings of *England* could never satisfie the *Welshmen* until *Edward of Carnarvan* ( being their Countryman born ) was made Prince of *Wales* ; which hath since been the Title of the Kings eldest Son.

God himself promiseth it, as a chief part of *Israels* Prosperity after their return from their Captivity , that their Nobles should be of themselves , and their Governours should proceed from the midst of them , *Jeremiah* 30. 21. which Promise was performed in *Ezra's* , *Nehemiah's* and *Zerkabal's* Government: so *Moses* appointed understanding and wise men , who were known amongst their Tribes, to be Rulers in their respective Tribes, *Deut.*

1. 13. Saith a great Statesman to King *James*, To hold Ireland in better obedience, let there be sent over such a Lord Deputy as is well acquainted with their Humours and Customs, and well beloved of the people \*: saith the same Author, The Spaniards <sup>State of Christen-</sup> lost the Low Countries by sending Spaniards or other <sup>dom. p. 2.</sup> 18. <sup>\* Sir Hen. Wootens</sup>

Strangers

*Strangers to govern them, having engaged to govern them by men born in their own Country.* \*

\* **Sir Hen. Wootens** And how much this hath been the practice of the *State of Christen-dom.* p. 17. Kings of *England*, to place persons peculiarly interested in the State of *Ireland* in chief Government, our Histories give us ample examples : *Earl Strongbow*, the first *Lord Lieutenant of Ireland* 1176. was *Prince of Leinster*, by right of his Wife ; *Reymond le Gross*, who married the Earls Sister, succeeded him as Justice ; *John Courcy*, *Robert Fitz Stephen*, and *Miles Cogan*, Adventurers with *Strongbow* in the first Attack, and possessors of Lands for their Service, succeeded him ; next to them succeeded *Hugh de Lacy* and *Robert le Power*, both interested persons in *Ireland* ; *Le Power* being then Governor of *Waterford* and *Wexford*, was possest of

\* **Cambden of Ireland.** *Lacy* marrying the Daughter of *Rodorick King of Connaght*, had a considerable Interest in *Ireland* by her right ; the King still approving interested persons fitteſt to govern *Ireland*, that designing to ſend over his own Son *John*, he first made him King of *Ireland* to give him a peculiar Interest in that

† **Hoven-den P. 77.** Kingdom † : from his time, being anno Dom. 1185. until *Lionel Duke of Clarence* 1361. near 200 years, that *Edward the Third's Son* was ſent over, who by right of his Wife was *Earl of Ulster*, and *Lord of Connaght*, I find *Ireland* governed, for the moſt part, by *Butlers* of the *House of Ormonde*, *Fitz Morris*, *Fitz John*, *Fitz Gerralds*, &c. of the *Houses of Kildare* and *Desmond*, with *Woggans*, *Barrys*, *Powers*, *Bourkes*, *Burminghams*,

G.

&c. and in intervals by Dignitaries of the Church, or other Ministers of State in *Ireland*; I find very few but either had considerable Interest in *Ireland*, or otherwise settled on them at their sending over, or purchased by them in the time of their Service, and settled there with their Families.

In all which time we read of very few Factions, until that of *Desmond*, who raised a Dissension betwixt the *English* of Blood and *English* of Birth; which bred such ill Blood in his own Families Veins, as boyled up to the ruine of it: afterwards, in the Queens days 1583. and from the time of the Duke of *Clarence* 1361. until 1385. the Earl of *Oxford* was created Duke of *Ireland* and Marques of *Dublin* at his coming over, of Twelve Lord Lieutenants and Deputies, &c. in that time, not above two or three at the most, but *Butlers*, *Gerralds*, &c.

Next *Richard* the Second sent over *Mortymer* Lord Lieutenant, but first created him Earl of *Ulster*, Lord of *Trim*, *Clare* and *Connacht*, 1398. from him until the year 1449. I find not above four or five, viz. *Sir John Stanly*, *Scroop*, *Sutton de Gray*, &c. and they but short times, but persons of *Ireland*, viz. *Talbots*, *Gerralds* and *Butlers*, the later six times in this short space of about fifty years.

Then was *Richard* Duke of *York*, being Earl of *Ulster*, Lord of *Connacht* and *Meath*, by Descent from *Lionel* Duke of *Clarence*, Lord Lieutenant.

But

But for a more distinct Account of Irelands Chief Governours since the Conquest, I shall refer the Reader to the ensuing Catalogue, as I find it recorded by *Borlacy, Spencer, Campian, Hanmer, Marlburroughs, Hooker, &c.* wherein I have only noted some few remarkable things that happened under some of their Governments, designing only a brief Catalogue of both sorts, to make good my Position, that the Policy of *England* hath still found it best to govern *Ireland* by its own Members, or persons peculiarly interested in its prosperity. But this is observable, when Noblemen, &c. were sent out of *England* to govern *Ireland*, it was not of choice, but rather of necessity; as in these and the like cases.

First, to ballance Factions amongst the *English* Lords of *Ireland*, when their animosities grew so high that Interest of State required a more indifferent Hand at the Helm; which proceeded from their great Power ruling their Tenants, &c. as Sovereign Princes over large Territories, by the *Brehon* Laws, whereby multitudes both of *English* and *Irish* more depended upon their Favour than the Kings: but that sort of Lordship is utterly extinguished root and branch, the greatest Lords of *Ireland* are as subject to the Kings Laws as the meanest man, and the whole Militia of the Kingdom under the Kings immediate Commission and Pay: therefore that Reason ceaseth.

Second Reason was, to ballance Factions in the Court of *England*, especially in the Barons Wars, and in the Contest betwixt the two Houses of *York*

and

Chap  
and L  
only g  
danger

Th  
when

1. Exper  
posed  
well f  
Coura  
land, i  
Office  
condu

2. Factio  
Englis  
which  
for sev  
emplo  
of the  
of Ger  
Tower  
time th  
ring H  
Bretet  
Edwar  
and Eli  
the lik  
the rea  
or rath  
Noble  
still adh

and *Lancaster*, &c. but the two Roses now are not only graffed, but so well grown upon one stalk, that danger is over.

Thirdly, in times of considerable Rebellions, when either of these two Reasons swayed.

1. When the Work required persons of greater Experience in Martial Affairs, than it was supposed *Ireland* afforded: but *Ireland* is now so well furnished with Noble persons of approved Courage and Conduct, that it is able to supply *England*, if the Kings Affairs should require it, with Officers from the Truncheon to the Halbert, to conduct a Royal Army.

2. When the great Lords of *Ireland* were in Factions one against the other, especially those of *English* Race; as the *Geraldines*, and *Butlers*, &c. which two Houses mantained an inveterate Feud for several Generations; yet by turns were chiefly employ'd by *Henr. 7th.* and *8th.* till the *20th.* year of the Reign of *Henry the Eighth*, *Thomas* the Son of *Gerald Earl of Kildare*, then Prisoner in the Tower, broke out into Rebellion; from which time the King sent over *English* Governours during his Life, as *Skeffington*, the *Lord Gray*, *Brereton*, *St. Leger*, &c. which course his Son *Edward the Sixth*, and both his Daughters, *Mary* and *Elizabeth* imitated him in, for the most part; the like King *James* and *Charles the First*: but the reason thereof must be attributed to the Change or rather Reformation of Religion; most of the Noble Families of *Ireland*, capable of chief Trust, still adhering to the *Roman Superstition*, and consequently

sequently uncapable of promoting a Protestant Interest, which case is now otherwise, most of the ancient Nobility of *Ireland* are Protestants, as may appear in my Schedule of *Irelands* Nobility; and as that reason of State is ceased, so hath the practice since. About two years after the Rebellion, *Jan. 1643.* *James* then Marques now Duke of *Ormonde* was sworn Lord Lieutenant; since which time, being 39 years *Jan* last, he hath born the Honour of Lord Lieutenant of *Ireland*, except from the *18th. of September 1669.* the Lord *Roberts* entred, until the *24th. of August 1677.* the Earl of *Essex* surrender'd, not full eight years; so that the Duke hath born the Honour 31 years, and actually exercised the Regency 19 years, being interrupted about 12 years, *viz.* from *December 1650.* he left *Clanrickard* Deputy, until the *28th. of July 1662.* when His Grace was again sworn Lord Lieutenant; and as he hath exercised the longest Regency, so hath he had the most difficult Work of any chief Governor since the Conquest: First, Commander of an Army for some years under great wants, the hardest task to a noble spirited General. Secondly, Fighting against a people he desired and endeavoured the Welfare of, that would not believe him until they found it to their cost, that their Ingratitude and Treachery to him and their Princes Interest, that he asserted, fell upon their own pates. Thirdly, Fighting for a Prince in no capacity to support him, much less to reward him; yet when his Princes State and Affairs were at the lowest ebb his Loyalty was at hihgest,

at

at full Sea, rejecting the greatest proffers of Liberty and Estate from the Parliament, and chose Poverty in Exile with his Prince before it ; as is elegantly expref'd by *Orinda*, fol. 150.

*You who three potent Kingdoms late have seen  
Tremble with fury, and yet stedfast been,  
Who an afflicted Majesty could wait  
When it was seemingly forsook by Fate,  
Whose settled Loyalty no storms dismayed,  
Nor the more flatt'ring mischiefs could dissuade.*

Yet their Proffer did him so much right as to declare to the world his Services in *Ireland* were esteemed by *Englands* Commons (in their worst humour to the Royal Interest that he served) as useful to the *English* Protestant Interest there ; but from these and the like causes the Crown of *England* hath had its Counsels more perplexed, and its attempts for *Irelands* Reduction and Settlement more obstructed by its own people in *Ireland* than by the *Irish* themselves, since the time of *Edward the Sixth*, viz. by the vicissitude of its Government being so often under the Regiment of persons that were Aliens to its peculiar Interest, and strangers to its Humours and Customs : it is not rational to suppose the most judicious States-man in the world can understand the Interest and Humour of a Country he never saw before, proportionable to another that hath track'd it from end to side, who must see by others eyes where to place Garrisons and Quarters for the most Safety and

Quiet of the Country, how to understand the humour and capacity of persons fit to be employed in the Kings Service civil or military, who are the most dangerous persons, which the most disquiet people, to have an eye upon, &c. I say, there are many necessary points for a chief Governor to know not to be learn'd in three or four years time, the usual length of our Lord Lieutnants, &c. Regency; and where persons have neither time to understand their Work, nor to fit and whet their Instruments they must work by, what performance can rationally be expected?

In *Spencer Eudox* proposeth to *Iren* how many Men would be a competent Army to reduce and keep *Ireland*? he demandeth ten thousand Foot and one thousand Horse: saith *Eudox*, *Where will you garrison and quarter them for the safety of the Country?* saith *Iren*, *Perhaps I am ignorant of the places, but I will take the Maps of Ireland and lay them before me, and make mine eyes my Schoolmasters to judge of the place;* and then proceeds to garrison and quarter his Men by the Map. Saith *Eudoxus*, *This might do if you knew where to find the Enemy;* but it is well known, he is a flying Enemy, hiding himself in Woods and Baggs, &c. from which he will not be drawn forth, but into some streight passage, or perilous foord, there will he lie in wait till he find an advantage, and then will endanger your Army: therefore to seek him that still flincheth, and to follow him that can hardly be found were vain and bootless. *Spencer* pag. 63.

So *Geraldus Cambrensis* Chap. 38. to the same pur-

purpose compares the Difference between the *French* and *Irish* Wars, shewing how far Souldiers trained up in Campaign Countries, fighting pitch'd Battels with their Enemies always in sight, would be to seek in *Ireland*, where the Enemy rarely imbodyes, but at great advantages, but must be driven out of their Fortresses of Woods and Boggs, &c. where heavy Armour and Weapons were more cumbersome than useful; *But*, saith he, such Souldiers as are in the Marshes of *Wales*, who by reason of continual War are of great experience, and valiant, who can endure any pains and travells, who can abide watching, hunger and thirst, &c. such kind of Souldiers were they who first conquered *Ireland*, and by such must it be fully subdued and kept.

*Obj.* Why do you term *English* Protestants Aliens to *Irelands* Interest, are we not all the Subjects of one King, and Members of the same Commonwealth.

*Ans<sup>w</sup>.* We may be the first, and not the second, though the *Scots* are Subjects to the same King, yet Members of a distinct Commonwealth, that as *England* makes Laws to secure their Trade from *Scotch* Invasions, so doth *Scotland* for the securing theirs from *English* Retrenchments.

So the twelve Tribes of *Israel* were all the Children of one *Abraham*, and the Subjects of one *David*, yet had they their distinct Interest peculiar to each Tribe; the members of one Tribe were never admitted to bear rule, or enjoy the beneficial Offices of another; the Mosaical

and judicial Law were expressly against it, Numb. ch. 1. v. 4. *And with you there shall be a man of every Tribe: every one Head of the House of his Fathers.* ch. 13. v. 2. ch. 34. v. 18. Deut. 1. 13. which Statutes of *Israel* were observed in David's time, 1 Chron. 8. 1. and by his Son *Solomon*, 2 Chron. 8. 2. and so continued to the end of that Kingdom; which were no ways ceremonial, but moral, that every man and every Country that had not forfeited their Birthright might enjoy the priviledge of it. And not only Divine but Humans Laws and Policies have still observed the same, where the Interest of the Prince or State was not hazarded: the most ancient Monarchies, as the *Assyrian*, *Persian*, *Grecian*, and *Roman* practised it in all their tributary Countries, still committing the management of the civil and military Governments of their new conquer'd Countries to the Colonies they sent to plant and guird them, though they consisted not of their own Countrymen; as for instance, the new planting of *Samaria* was by people of divers Nations, *Ezra* names nine, ch. 4. v. 9. as the *Dinaites*, the *Apharsathchites*, the *Tarpelites*, the *Apharsites*, the *Archevites*, the *Babylonians*, the *Susanchites*, the *Dehavites* and the *Elamites*, and the rest of the Nations, whom the great and noble *Ashnapper* brought over, and set in the Cities of *Samaria*: yet these several Nations being upon the place, incorporated into one common Interest against the *Jews*, were all intrusted with the Government and Safety of the Country; as appears by their joint Letter sent to the King, to inform him of the danger of his

his Interest in that Country, if he suffered the *Jews* to repair the Walls of *Jerusalem*, he would not only lose his Revenue, but his Dominion in *Samaria*, *vers. 13.* compared with the *16th.* which they esteemed themselves bound to inform him of *being maintained from the Kings Palace*, that is, they enjoyed the profitable Offices and Employments of the Country, for which they received their Salaries out of his Exchequer.

And from hence it was *Paul* pleaded the privilege of a *Roman*, *Acts 22. 25.* who was no otherwise a *Roman*, but as he was born of a member of a *Roman Colony* sent to *Tarsus* to plant, and secure the Country to the *Roman State*, and thereby were endowed with the privilege of *Roman Citizens*, to oblige them to Fidelity and Serviceableness against the Natives, who were never trusted with the Safety of the Victors Interest in their own Country, unless they submitted, and became Tributaries under Compact before conquered. Not only these ancient but our modern Monarchs practice the same, as the *Grand Seignior*, and the *German Empire*, consisting of many distinct Principalities and States; yet all governed by their own Princes and Senators, except what are in slavery; and they by those Colonies sent to plant and keep them under: the like are the Principalities and States of *Italy* under the Papal Regency; which I hint to vindicate my Assertion from Novelty, it having been the universal Policy in all Ages and Countries; as all that are acquainted with History must grant.

But the case of the *English* in *Ireland* is far before these other cases, they are not only *English* by privilege, as *Paul* was a *Roman*, but *English* by Blood, and many of them *English* by Birth; they are so far from being a conquered, or a tributary people, that they are the Conquerors, by virtue of whose Blood, and the Blood of their Ancestors, the Scepter of *England* is there swayed; and the chief Security the Crown of *England* hath for its Regency is the Strength and Potency of the *English* in *Ireland*: 1000 men raised for the Defence of *Ireland* of its own Inhabitants is worth two (for the suppressing a Rebellion) of new raised men out of *England*; for besides their subjection to the Diseases of the Country at first, which usually destroy a great part of them before they have been six months in the Field, they have no motive to encourage them, nor Interest to fight for, but Honor and Profit; whereas the other, who have their Title from the Crown for every Acre they possess in *Ireland*, are more engaged to secure the Interest of the Crown, than the King himself is theirs; few of the forfeiting *Irish* look so far as the King, who reassumes and disposeth of their Estates, but eye with indignation the present possessors; as was manifest in the last horrid Massacre, whilst they barbarously murthered the possessors of their Estates, they both by Addresses, and publick Remonstrances asserted their Loyalty to the King: and though the Kings Interest at present suffer, yet the Recovery of it is secure so long as *England* and *Scotland* can raise Souldiers to pour in upon them.

But

But the Subjects, whose throats are cut, and their Houses and Improvements destroyed, Wives and Daughters ravished, and Children murthered, can have no reparation in this world; and such as do escape with their lives are utterly ruined in their Fortunes, oft constrained to sell a good part of their wasted Lands in the *Irish* Quarters for a third part of its value, to procure Mony to preserve them and theirs from starving. Now the Survivors to these Families are doubtless above all other people engaged to preserve and recover the Interest of the Crown in time of War, and consequently most merit to enjoy the profitable Im- ployments of the Country in times of Peace, being every way more engaged and better qualified for the Kings Service there, than *pro tempore* persons who have no obligation upon them, but their present Honour or Profit, that if the Kingdom be lost under their Conduct, if they can but preserve their Lives and Honours, they lose nothing that pincheth afterward; whereas the Noblemen and Gentlemen of *Ireland*, some of which having Princely Estates, may be reduc'd to extremity of want, of which we had many woful presidents the last Rebellion; and all the Politicks I have read esteem desperate hazard and danger will make a Coward valiant; (therefore advise to make a flying Enemy a golden Bridge) much more engage the Hearts and Hands of persons of Honour and Courage, when they they do not only fight for the King and their Country, *but for their Wives and Children, their Houses and Lands, as Nehem.*

4. 14. they cannot forget how many of their Wives and Daughters were ravished, and innocent Children murthered in the sight of their dearest Relations and Friends, and from thence will rather dye than fall into the Hands of such bloody miscreants, whose tender mercies are cruelties, which is not the case of new English.

*Spencer pag. 8. treating of Military Officers puts a great weight upon employing Officers acquainted with the Country, saith he, The Reducing of Ireland will ask no long time, nor great charge, so as the effecting thereof be committed to men of trust, and sound experience in the Country: but if left to such raw Captains as are usually sent out of England, &c. it will fall to the ground, &c. for before they have gather'd Experience they shall buy it with great loss to Her Majesty, either by hazarding their Companies by ignorance of the places and manner of Irish Service, or by losing much time to take out their lesson, &c. besides, saith he, there is a great wrong done to the old Souldiers, when the Advancement due unto them is cut off, by shuffling in these new cutting Captains into the places for which they have long served, and well deserved: To say the truth (saith he) me thinks it is meet before men be made Captains they should be first Souldiers, pag. 84. for men throughly acquainted both with the state of the Country, and manners of the people, should be still continued, pag. 85.*

*Saith Livy, The Romans could perform nothing memorable in their Conquest of Sicilia whilst they frequently changed the Commanders of their Army, because*

because new Commanders spent so much time in their new preparations, chusing their Ground, and insinuating themselves into the old Souldiery, they had no time left for the management of their Affairs before they were removed; but to prevent their Consuls from being removed from the head of their Armies, being annually chosen, they chose a Dictator, Liv. Supplement, 79.

And that this hath been the Opinion of all our Kings of England, since the Conquest of Ireland, will more evidently appear by the ensuing Catalogue, formed in two Columes, to distinguish betwixt English and Irish Chief Governors; only note that such of them as are in the English Colume,

1. If they be sent again we esteem them of Ireland, and place them in the *Irish* Colume, supposing they were therefore sent because of their experience in and knowledge they have gained of the Country by their former Service, &c.
2. I do also esteem all of the Royal Line interested persons, and therefore place them in the *Irish* Colume.

---



A Catalogue of the Chief Governors of *Ireland*, from the first Conquest to the Year 1680. by which may be observed, that persons related to, and acquainted with, and interested in *Ireland's* Welfare have been most employed in its Government by the Kings of *England*.

From 1167. unto 1170. was spent by *Strongbow* and his Assistance in vindicating the Quarrel of *Mac Murrogh King of Leinster, &c.*

1171. The King, jealous of *Strongbow's* potency, comes towards *Ireland*, *Strongbow* meets him at *Glocester*, surrenders all his Conquests to his Dispose, returns with him to *Waterford*, from thence to *Dublin*, to whom all the petty Kings and great Lords of *Ireland* submit, and swear Fealty; the King returns for *England*, and leaves *Hugh Lacy* Lord Justice, to interest him gave him *Meath* in Fee.

*Irish.*

*English.*

*Henry the Second.*

*Anno 1172. Hugh de Lacy Lord Justice, Spell.*

331.

*O'Rourke Prince of Meath, &c. rebels, Lacy in great danger rescued by Maurice Fitz Gerald, who killed O'Rourke. Hamm. 139.*

*Irish*

## Irish.

## English.

1173. *Earl Strongbow*  
*L. Warden of Ireland,*

By right of his Wife Prince  
of *Leinster*, found all in confu-  
sion, but with the aid of *Ray-  
mond le Gros* reduceth them  
to subjection, *Hann.* p. 140.

1175. *Strongbow* dies, *Camp. 64.*  
*Donald* Prince of *Leinster* re-  
bels, all in confusion, *Camp. 65.*

1177. *Raymond Le  
Gros* L. Protector,

Brother in Law to *Strongbow*,  
subdues *Donald*, and relieves  
the Citie of *Dublin*.

1177. *Fitz Andelm L.J.*

*Courcey*, *Fitz Stephen* and *Miles  
de Cogan* his Counsellors, *Han.*  
p. 157. The Ancestors of the  
*Bourks*, now Earl of *Clanricard*,  
*Cambrensis* chap. 17. *Courcey*  
subdued *Ulster*, the Kingdom  
of *Cork* settled on *Fitz Stephens*  
and *Cogan* in *Fee*, *Fitz Stephens*  
the Ancestor of the *Barrys*  
of *Cork*.

1179. *Hugh Lacy and  
Robert le Power L. J.*  
*Power* the Ancestor of the  
*Powers* of *Waterford*.

Irish.

## Irish.

## English.

1181. Hugh de Lacy  
Governor, *Hollinshead.*

O Connor King of Connacht re-  
bels with 2000 men, *Lacy* sub-  
dues him and marries his  
Daughter, after slain by a  
Scologh in *Meath. Hook.* p.60.

1185. Earl John the  
Kings Son made King of  
Ireland and sent Governor,  
*Hovend.* 1187.

This young Prince, with his  
Counsellors, ran all into con-  
fusion. Young Arms make  
good Souldiers, but young  
Heads ill Counsellors: Wit-  
nesses *Rehoboam, &c.*

1185. John de Courcey  
*Earl of Ulster Gov.*

Chose by the King to be his  
Champion against a French-  
man who quitted the Stage  
and run, being frightened by  
the grim looks and great limbs  
of *Courcey. Hanmer* p. 181.

Richard the First.

1189. Hugh de Lacy  
*the younger L. J.*

1190. *Dublin* burnt to ashes.  
*Hann. 179.*

1181. John Constable  
of Cheshire and Richard  
de Peck Justices, *Hov-  
end.* p. 685.

1184. Philip de Brees  
Governor.

Irish

## Irish.

## English.

1191 William Marshall  
and William Pettit Just.  
Marshall by right of his Wife  
Strongbow's Daughter Prince of  
Leinster, who built the Castle  
of Kilkenny, and gave the  
Town a Charter, *Hanm.* 183.

## King John.

1199. Myler Fitz Henry  
*the Kings Son Governor.* *Han.* p. 183.

1210. K. John *in person*  
Composed all Differences,  
settled Affairs and returned.  
*Camp.* 75.

1213. Henry Laundres  
*Arch-Bp. of Dublin* L. J.  
Built the Castle of *Dublin.*

## Henry the Third.

1214. St. Patricks Church  
founded by Comin Arch-Bp.  
of *Dublin.* *Camp.* p. 76. 6000  
Scots under *Bruce* invade *Ireland.*

1215. Geffery Marisco

1197. Hamo de Valis  
L. J.

1210. John Gray *Bishop*  
*of Norwich* L. J.  
He reformed the *Irish Coin*  
to the Standard of *England.*

Irish,

## Irish.

## English.

Keeper of Ireland, with  
Sir Edmond Butler L. J.  
*Connacht* up in Arms, *Fitz Gerald*  
built the Castle of *Sligo*.

1219. *Bishop Laundres*  
*and Maurice Fitz Gerald*  
L. J. *Han.* p. 189.

1220. *Meath* in Arms, the  
*Castle of Trym* builded, the  
*Irish* generally rebel, 11000  
slain in *Connacht* by the *Bourks*  
*and Berminghams*, *Bruce* routed  
near *Dundalk*, *Birmingham* for  
his good Service created Earl  
of *Louth*, Baron of *Ardee* and  
*Athenrie*.

1227. *Rich. de Burgo* L. J.  
1230. *The Provost of Dublin*  
made Mayor.

1232. *Maurice Fitz Gerald* L. J.

1233. *Richard Marshall*  
*Brother to William* L. J.  
Slain in Battel near *Kildare*.

1245, *Sir Jo. Fitz Geoffrey* L. J.

1247. *Theobald Butler*

Irish.

## Irish.

## English.

*Lord of Carick and Joh.*  
Cogan L. J.

1259. *Stephen de Long*  
Espee L. J.

1267. *Sir David de Bar-*  
ry L. J.  
Who subdued the *Mac Cartys*.

1270. *Sir James Audley*  
*Constable of Ulster* L. J.

1272. *Maur. Fitz Mau-*  
rice L. J.

1273. *Geoffery Lord*  
*Genevil* L. J.  
Lord of *Meath* by right of his  
Wife.

1276. *Sir R. de Ufford*  
*the second time* L. J.

1279. *Bish. of Waterf.* L. J.

1280. *Dublin burnt, Strongbows*  
Tomb spoiled by the fall of  
*Christ-Church* when on fire,  
*Camp.* p. 78. *Meath rebels.*

1255. *Allen de la Zouch*,  
L. J.

*O Neils of Ulster and Mac Car-*  
*tys of Munster rebel.*

1260. *William Dean* L. J.  
1261. *Rich. de Rupella*  
L. J.

1266. A great Earthquake  
*Hook.* p. 62.

1268. *Sir Robert de Uf-*  
ford L. J.  
A great Dearth & Mortality.

1269. *Ricardus de Exo-*  
nia L. J.

Irish.

Irish.

English.

1282. Stephen de Fulborn L. J.

1288. Arch-Bp. of Dublin L. J.

1290. Will. Vesey L. J.  
Who to interest him in the prosperity of *Ireland* had given him the Manner & Lordship of *Rahangan*, &c. in the County of *Kildare*, but engaging himself against *John Fitz Gerald* Baron of *Ophaly* lost himself, and the Baron sent back first Earl of *Kildare*, and *Vesey's* Estate conferred on him.

1307. Knights Templers for their Debauchery dissolved, Knights of the Road constituted, Camp. p. 80. *Connaght* in Arms.

1308. Lord Bourk L. J.  
The Ancestor of the House of *Castle Connel* and *Leitrim*.

1309. Lucan Bridge built.

1312. Sir Edmond le Butler Deputy.

He unites the Earls of *Ulster* and the *Geraldines*, who caused great troubles, and subdu'd the Rebels of *Connaght*. Camp. 82.

Irish.

## Irish.

## English.

1314. *Lord de Verdon*

L. J.

Had a great Estate in *Meath*  
in right of his Wife. *Book. 62.*1314. *Sir Edmond le  
Butler, Earl of Carrick*

L. J.

Subdued the *Irish* at *Castle-  
Dermot..*1317. *Roger Mortimer*L. J. but the *Lord Ber-  
mingham General.**Bruce invades Ireland, Ulster  
joins with him overrun the  
Kingdom, soon after subdued*1318. *Will. Fitz John*

L. J.

1320. *Earl of Kildare*

L. J.

He built *Loghlin Bridge*: the  
Pope granted the priviledge  
of an University to *Dublin.*1321. *Lord of Athenry*

L. J.

Slain with others by *Mac Go-  
bagon.*1322. *Ralph de Gorges*

L. J.

I i

Irish.

Irish.

English.

1323. Sir Jo. Darcy L.J.  
The *Irish* universally rebel,  
vanquished by *James Earl of  
Ormond, & Birmingham* hang-  
ed. *Camp.* 88.

1327. *Earl of Kildare*  
L.J.

1328. *Prior of Kilmain-  
ham* L.J.

In his time the *Geraldines*,  
*Butlers*, *Birmingham* at vari-  
ance with the *Powers* and  
*Bourks*, a Parliament sum-  
moned to accord them.

1329. Sir John Darcy a  
second time L.J.

*Irish of Leinster* in Rebellion.  
*Camp.* 87.

1330. *Prior of Kilmain-  
ham* L.J.

1331. Sir Anthony La-  
cy L.J.

A great slaughter by the *Eng-  
lish* of the *O Connors*, &c. in  
*Leinster*. *Marleborough* 210.

1332. Sir John Darcy  
a third time L.J.

Great slaughter on the *Obrians*  
& *Mac Cartys* in *Munster*. *Marl.*  
*p. 211.*

Irish.

## Irish.

## English.

1333. Thom. de Burgh

L. J.

1336. On St. Lawrence day ten thousand Irish slain in Connaught. *Marlb. p. 212.*

1340. Prior of Kilmainham L. J.

1344. Sir Ralph Ufford  
*Husband to the Countess of Ulster* L. J.

*Desmonds* first discontents, *Ufford* died unlamented by his ill Government. *Hook. 71.*

1346. Sir Roger Darcy  
L. J.

1346. Sir John Maurice  
L. J.

In whose time *Desmond* made a dissention between the *English* of Blood and *English* of Birth.

1348. Sir Walter Birmingham L. J. John Archer Dep. *Camp. 90.*

1337. Sir John Charlton L. J.

The *Irish* generally rebel, are quell'd by the Earl of *Kildare* and *Desmond*. *Camp. 88.*

1341. Sir John Maurice  
L. J.

## Irish.

1349. Sir Walter Birmingham L. J.

1349. Baron Carey L.J.

1351. Bishop of Limerick L. J.

The Ulsters rebel, and subdued by the Savages. Camp. 30.

1355. Earl of Desmond L. J.

1356. Sir. Tho. Rooks by a second time L. J.

1359. James Butler Earl of Ormond L. J.

He married the Grandchild of Edw. the first, for which his Son James was styled, by way of preheminence, the Noble Earl.

1360. Earl of Kildare L.J. Appointed 500 l. per ann. Salary, and required out of that to maintain 20 great Horse for War. Hook. 72.

## English.

1349. Sir Tho. Rooks by L. J.

Whose saying was, he had rather drink out of Wooden Cups, and pay Gold and Silver for his Liquor, than drink out of Gold, and make wooden payment; a man of sincere and upright Conscience, faith Camp. 91. he would be deemed a precise Fop in these days.

1357. Sir Almerick de Sancta L. J.

## Irish.

Irish.

English.

1361. *Duke of Clarence*  
Lord Lieutenant.

The third Son of *Edw.* the third, Earl of *Ulster* and Lord of *Connaght*, he vanquished the *Obrians*, &c. and conquered the County of *Clare*, from which he derived his Title of *Clarence*.

1364. *James Earl of Ormond* L. D.

1367. *Earl of Desmond*  
L. J.

1371. *Earl of Kildare*  
L. J.

1374. *Sir William de Windsor* L. L.

1376. *James Butler Earl of Ormond* L. L.

Richard the Second.

1381. *Dean of St. Patricks and Lord Chancellor* L. J.

1365. *Sir Thom. Dale Governor.*

1369. *Sir William de Windsor* L. L.

1370. *A great Mortality in Ireland.*

1372. *Sir Robert de Ashton* L. J.

1379. *John de Bromwhich* L. J.

## Irish.

## English.

1383. Philip de Courtney, L. L.

1385. Robert Vere *Earl of Oxford, Marquess of Dublin and Duke of Ireland* L. L.

Of whom *Cambden* records, he died in great anguish and penury, leaving nothing to his Tomb but Titles, nor to the World, but matter of talk of his ill life.

1385. Sir John Stanley L. D.

1387. *Bish. of Meath* L. J.

1389. Sir John Stanley L. J.

1392. James *Earl of Ormond* L. J.

1394. *Duke of Gloucester*, L. J.

1394. *King Richard the Second in person*.

He landed at *Waterford* with four thousand men at Arms and thirty thousand Archers, left *Roger Mortimer Earl of Ulster, Lord of Trym, Clare & Connaught* L. L. slain by the *Obrians*.

1398. Roger Grey L. J.

Irish

## Irish.

## English.

1398. *Duke of Surrey, the Kings Brother, L. L.*

1399. *King Richard 2. the second time.*

Who came to avenge Mortimers Death. In this Year broke out that bloodie War betwixt the Houses of Lancaster and York, from which time not only England but Ireland were divided into two powerful Factions; the Geraldines stood by the House of York, and the Butlers by the House of Lancaster; the King returns, soon after loseth his Kingdom and Life.

1403. *James Earl of Ormond L. J.*

Chose by the Noblemen of Ireland.

1405. *Gerald Earl of Kildare L. J.*

1406. *Stephen Scroop L. D.*

1407. *James Son of the former Earl of Ormond L. J.*

## Henry the Fourth.

1399. *Sir John Stanley L. L.*

1401. *Stephen Scroope L. D. to Thomas of Lancaster the Kings Son.*

## Irish.

1408. Thomas of Lancaster, the King's Son, L. L. left Thomas Butler Dep.

The Sword given to the City of Dublin, the Provost made Major.

## Henry the Fifth.

1413. The said Butler continued L. J.

1413. Sir John Stanley L. L.

The Ancestor of the Earls of Derby.

1414. Crawley Arch-Bishop of Dublin L. J.

1414. Sir John Talbot L. L.

In whose time Ireland supplied the King with 1600 men, to assist him in his Wars with France.

1419. Richard Talbot Arch-Bishop of Dublin L. J.

## English.

1408. Thomas of Lancaster, the King's Son, L. L. left Thomas Butler Dep.

The Sword given to the City of Dublin, the Provost made Major.

1413. The said Butler continued L. J.

1413. Sir John Stanley L. L.

The Ancestor of the Earls of Derby.

1414. Crawley Arch-Bishop of Dublin L. J.

1414. Sir John Talbot L. L.

In whose time Ireland supplied the King with 1600 men, to assist him in his Wars with France.

1419. Richard Talbot Arch-Bishop of Dublin L. J.

Irish.

English.

1420. James Butler *Earl of Ormond* L. L.

His Grandf<sup>r</sup> James, surnam'd the *Cat*, near *Asby* vanquished the Armie of the *O Moors* and *Mac Morroughs*, &c. quelled the *Obrians* in *Leinster*, the *Bourks*, *Mac Mahons*, &c. in *Thomond*, in three months time. *Camp.* 97.

Henry the Sixth.

1423. *Earl of Ulster* L. L.  
And died of the Plague.

1425. John *Lord Talbot* L. J.

1426. James Butler *Earl of Ormond* L. J.  
And died at *Ormond-Place* in *London*.

1427. Sir John de Grey  
L. L.

1428. Edward Dantsey  
*Bishop of Meath* Dep.

1428. Sir John Sutton  
L. L. Sir Tho. Strange  
his Dep.

Irish

138 <sup>1</sup>	The Interest	Part. 2.	Chap.
Irish.	English.		surer to the
1432 Sir Christopher Plunket L. D.			1454 Ardm
1435 Sir Thomas Stanley L. L.			1454 L. D.
1436 Talbot Arch-Bp. of Dublin L. D.			1454 Eustat
1440 James Earl of Ormond L. L.	1438 Lyon Lord Wells L. L.		the D
1443 Earl of Ormond L. L.	1441 Sir William Stanley L. D.		1456 Lord
1447 Talbot Arch-Bp. of Dublin L. J.	1441 Stephen Scroop L. D.		1459 York
1449 Duke of York L. L. In Meath the Rebels burnt several Towns and Villages, destroyed Men, Women and Children without mercy.	1442 Will. Wells Dep. to Lyon Lord Wells.		and L Lord
Camp. 99.	1446 Earl of Shrewsbury L. L.		Who per ann ment
1450 Earl of Ormond and Wiltshire Lord Treas-			Faction destro posseſſ Connag
			Ed
			1460 Lord
			Irish.

## Irish.

## English.

*Surer of England L. Dep.  
to the Duke of York.*

1454 *Arch-Bishop of  
Ardmagh L. D.*

1454 *Earl of Kildare  
L. D.*

1454 *Sir Edward Fitz  
Eustace Lord Deputy to  
the Duke of York.*

1456 *Earl of Kildare  
Lord Deputy.*

1459 *Richard Duke of  
York, Earl of Ulster  
and Lord of Connaght,  
Lord Lieutenant.*

Who contracted with the King for Two thousand Pounds  
*per annum*, with the *Irish* Revenue, to support the Government ten Years. The Nobility of *Ireland* increasing in Factions betwixt the Houses of *York* and *Lancaster*; many destroyed, whereby the *Irish* grew troublesome, forcibly possessing the Estates of the *English* in *Ulster, Munster* and *Connaght*.

## Edward the Fourth.

1460 *Earl of Kildare  
Lord Justice.*

Irish.

## Irish.

## English.

He

1461 Sir Rowland Fitz Eustace, *Lord of Portleister and Viscount Baltinglass*, *Lord Deputy to George Duke of Clarence*.

1463 Thomas *Earl of Desmond* *Deputy to the Duke of Clarence*.  
Beheaded for exacting Coin and Livery.

1471 Thomas *Earl of Kildare* L. D.

1475 *Bishop of Meath* Dep.

1478 Sir Robert Preston L. D.

1479 *E. of Kildare* L. D.

1483 Edw. 5. Rich. 3.

1485 *The said Earl of Kildare* L. D. to John de la Pole, *Earl of Lincoln* L. L.

The Imposture *Lambert Simnell* made a Disturbance in Ireland.

1467 John *Lord Tiptoft* *Earl of Worcester* L. D.

1478 *Lord Grey* L. D.

1492  
Bishop1493  
Lord  
town1495  
cellor1496  
dare L  
The ob  
o Cary  
eft Pow  
ther fin  
Arms, n  
one Eng1501  
York,  
L L.1503  
Bishop

Irish.

## Irish.

Henry the Seventh.

1492 Fitz Simons *Arch-Bishop of Dublin* L. D.

1493 Preston *the first Lord Viscount Gormans-town* L. D.

1495 Henry Dean *Chancellor of Ireland* L. J.

1496 Girald *E. of Kildare* L. L.  
The *Obrians, Mac Nemarras, O Carylls, &c.* with the greatest Power of *Irish* seen together since the Conquest up in Arms, routed and slain, not one *Englishman* lost. *Camp. 105*

1501 Henry *Duke of York, after King Hen. 8.* L. L. *Earl of Kildare* D.

1503 Fitz Simons *Arch-Bishop of Dublin* L. D.

## English.

1491 *Duke of Bedford*  
L. L.

1494 *Sir Edward Poynings* L. D.

Sent over to quell the Imposture *Perkin Warbeck*; who in a Parliament at *Drogheda* the 10. of Henry the Seventh past that Act called *Poynings Act*; quell'd the *O Caryls, Mac Nemarras* and *Obrians* in the County of *Gallaway*, received the Honor of the Order of the Garter, &c. for his Reward. *Hook. 79.*

## Irish.

Irish.

English.

*Henry the Eighth.**1509 Earl of Kildare continued.*

This was he of whom the King spake, If all *Ireland* can-  
not rule this Earl, then this  
Earl shall rule all *Ireland*. *Cam-  
pion* 107.

*1513 Gerald the Son of  
Gerald late Earl of Kil-  
dare L. J.*

In his time the 23. of *Hen. 8.*  
it was enacted, that none  
should be elected L. J. but an  
*Englishman* born in *England*,  
except by Patent from the  
King.

*1515 Lord Visc. Gor-  
manstown L. J.**1515 Earl of Kildare  
continued Lord Dep.*

In order to unite the Fam-  
ilies, married his Sister with  
*Pierce Butler Earl of Offory*,  
*Campion* 107.

*1519 Sir Thomas Fitz*

Irish.

Cha

Mau  
Kild

152

L D

152

dare

About

dine a

height

Butler.

of Spi

the Ea

litick,

gained

dare ou

106.

1526

rald o

chard

Delvin

1528

of Off

1532

dare L

## Irish.

## English.

Maurice of the House of Kildare L. J.

1521 *Earl of Ormond*  
L. D.

1524 *Girald Earl of Kildare* L. D.

About this time the *Geraldines* arrived to their greatest height of Power, and the *Butlers* to the greatest height of Spirit against them; but the *Earl of Ormond* more politick, and of a cooler temper, gained ground, and ran *Kildare* out of breath. *Campion* 106.

1526 Thomas Fitz Girald of Leislipe and Richard Nugent *Baron of Delvin* L. J.

1528 Pierce Butler *E. of Offery* L. D.

1532 Girald *Earl of Kildare* L. D.

1520 *Earl of Surrey* L. E.

Ulster in Rebellion. *Campion* 108.

1530 *Sir Willians Skilfington* L. D.

Vanquished the *Tools* and the *Bourns*. *Camp.* 107.

Irish.

English.

1534 Thomas Son to  
the Earl of Kildare L. D.

Who upon a false Report of his Father, then Prisoner in the Tower, was beheaded, tauntingly threw up the *Insignia Regalia*, killed the Arch-Bishop of *Dublin*, defied the King and his Authority, proclaimed open War, destroyed and burnt all before him, none resisting till the *Butlers* raised their Country to oppose him; upon which he wrote a Letter to his intimate Acquaintance and Cousin *James Butler*, whose Answer thereto is so loyal, pertinent and smart, I esteemed it worth a place amongst my Annotations, as a good Pattern for young Noblemen to write by, when under the like temptation.

Taking Pen in hand to write to you my resolute Answer, I muse in the very first line by what Name to call you, my Lord or my Cousin, seeing your notorious Treason hath defamed your Honour, and your desperate Lewdness shamed your Kindred; you are so liberal in parting Stakes with me, that a man would ween you had no right to the Game, so importunate in craving my Company, as if you would perswade me to hang with you for good fellowship: and think you that James is so mad to gape for Gudgeons, or so ungracious to sell his Truth for a piece of Ireland? Were it so (as it cannot be) that the Chickens you reckon were both hatched and feathered, yet be thou sure, I had rather in this Quarrel dye thine Enemy than live thy Partner. Camp. 119.

1534 Sir William Skif-  
fington L. D.

Irish.

153  
Grey  
ney  
Thom  
tainte

154  
ton  
Irela

1543  
bazo  
The C

1544  
Lege  
L. D.  
James  
land to  
fifty o  
died, h  
Ireland

Irish.

English.

1535 Leonard *Lord Grey* *Lord Viscount Graney* in Ireland L. D. Thomas Earl of *Kildare*, &c. tainted.

1540 *Sir Anthony St. Leger* D.

In his time the King and his Successors enacted in Parliament to be styled Kings of *Ireland*, and the Supremacy granted to the Crown.

1540 *Sir Will. Brereton* *Baron of Loghlin* in Ireland L. J.

1543 *Sir William Babazon* L. J.

The *Cavenaghs* rebel.

1544 *Sir Anthony St. Leger* the second time L. D.

James Earl of *Ormond*, at the Kings desire, saileth into *Scotland* to aid the Earl of *Lenox*, returns to *London*, himself and fifty of his Servants poisoned at a Supper, of which eighteen died, he by Will ordained his Heart should be interred in *Ireland*; on whom was made this Epitaph; (vid. *Hook. 105.*)

*The living Heart, where lay engraven,  
The care of Country deer,  
To Country lifeless is restor'd,  
And lies engraven here;  
Now heartless lives his Country then,  
Alas! what Joy is left,*

K k

*Whose*

Whose hope, whose hap, whose heart he was  
 Till Death his Life bereft ;  
 What Honour then is due to him,  
 For him what worthy Rite ,  
 But that each heart with heartiest love  
 His worthiest Heart requite.

My Author gives him this character, A man no less politick  
 in Peace than valiant in War , that as he would not begin  
 any Martial Broil rashly or unadvisedly , so he would not  
 seem to put it up lightly or easily.

## Irish.

1546 Sir William Bra-  
 bazon a second time L. J.

## English.

Edward the Sixth.

1547 Sir Anthony St.  
 Leger L. D.  
 He subdued the *Byrns, Tooles,*  
*C Conners, &c.*

1548 Sir Edward Bel-  
 lingham L. D.  
 Dublin Bailiffs made Sheriffs.  
 Camp. 123.

1549 Sir Francis Bry-  
 an Marshal of Ireland L.  
 Just.  
 Elected by the Kings leave.

## Irish

Chap

144

bazo

L. J.

The

bellic

155

Lege

He su

155

L. D

Ulster

stitut

print

readi

155

fack

mer

155

Lege

Depu

155

Arch

Irish.

English.

1449 Sir William Bra-  
bazon the third time  
L. J.

The Cavenaghs then in Re-  
bellion.

1550 Sir Anthony St.  
Leger a fourth time L.D.  
He subdued the Cavenaghs.

1551 Sir James Crofts  
L. D.

Ulster King at Arms first in-  
stituted, and the Liturgy  
printed and enjoined to be  
read in English.

1552 Sir Thomas Cu-  
sack and Sir Garret Ayl-  
mer L. J.

Queen Mary.

1553 Sir Anthony St.  
Leger the fifth time Lord  
Deputy.

1556 Lord Radcliff Vis-  
count Fitz Walters L.

1557 Hugh Corwin  
Arch-Bishop of Dublin

K k 2

I.  
Irish.

Irish.

English.

and Sir Hen. Sidney L.J.  
 1557 Sir Henry Sidney Treasurer of Ireland L.J.  
 Shane O'Neal rebels.

Queen Elizabeth.

1558 Radcliff Earl of Sussex L.L. Sir Henry Sidney his Dep.  
 Subdued the O'Connors, O'Moors, O'Dempseys, &c:

1559 Sir William Fitz Williams L.J.

1559 Earl of Sussex returned L.L.

Shane O'Neal submitted. Champion 125.

1561 Earl of Sussex L.L.

1565 Sir Henry Sidney L.D.

Shane O'Neal attainted and the name extinguished in Parliament: the Presidency of Ulster and Connacht were invested.

1565 Sir Nicholas Arnold L.J.

Irish.

156 Chan  
Fitz  
surer  
1568  
ney  
1571  
Willi  
1571  
ney

1582  
Arck  
and  
Irela  
Wall  
land  
Desmo  
Head

## Irish.

## English.

1567 Dr. Weston *Lord Chancellor and Sir Will. Fitz Williams Lord Treasurer of Ireland* L. J.

1568 *Sir Henry Sidney* L. D.

1571 *Sir William Fitz Williams* L. D.

1575 *Sir Henry Sidney* L. D.

1578 *Sir Will. Drury*  
L. J.  
*Desmond rebels.*

1579 *Sir Will. Pelham*  
L. J.  
*Rescued Carickfoyle from the Spaniard.*

1580 *Lord Grey* L. D.  
*Who drove the 700 Spaniards and Italians out of Kerry, and destroyed them with the Irish that joined with them.*

1582. Adam Loftus  
*Arch-Bishop of Dublin and Lord Chancellor of Ireland, with Sir Henry Wallop Treasurer of Ireland* L. J.

*Desmond surprised, and his Head sent to England.*

Irish.

English.

1588 *Sir William Fitz Williams* L. D.

Irish to be first trained up in Arms: This year the University of Dublin founded, and endowed with many Priviledges by the Queen.

1584 *Sir John Perrot*  
L. D.

Both blamed for suffering the

1597 *Sir Thomas Norris President of Munster Lord General of the Army against Tyrone.*

1597 *Adam Loftus Lord Chancellor of Ireland and Sir Robert Gardiner* L. J.

1594 *Sir William Russell* L. D.

Sir John Norris sent as an experienced Souldier to resist Tyrone, who were then 1000 Horse and 9500 Foot strong.

1597 *The Lord Burroughs* L. D.

1598 *Robert Earl of Essex* L. L.

Brought over a fresh Army of 16000 Foot and 1300 Horse, Success not answerable, being maligned at Court, the fate of too many of his Predecessors, returned for England, and was beheld in the Tower, 1601.

Irish.

1599. *Sir Adam Loftus and Sir George Carey Justices.*

## Irish.

## English.

King James.

1603 Sir George Carey  
L. D.Sent the first Justices of Af-  
fize into Ulster.1604 Sir Arthur Chi-  
chester L. D.Sent the first Justices of Af-  
fize into Munster and Con-  
nacht.1615 Thomas Jones  
Arch-Bp. of Dublin, &c.  
and Sir Richard Wing-  
field L. J.1614 Sir Arthur Chi-  
chester, then Lord of Bel-  
fast, the Ancestor of the  
now Earl of Donnegall  
L. D.In Parliament repealed several Statutes, declaring the Irish  
Rebels not Subjects but Enemies. *Vide Act. 11. Jacobi, fol.*  
427. the Harp first Marshal'd with the Arms of Great Britain.

## Irish.

## English.

1615 Thomas Jones  
*Lord Chancellor of Ire-  
 land, and Sir John Den-  
 ham Chief Justice of the  
 Kings Bench* L. J.

1622 *Lord Viscount E-  
 ly and Lord Visc. Powers*  
 Court L. J.

## Charles the First.

1629 *Lord of Cork and  
 Lord of Ely* L. J.

1633 *Lord Viscount*  
 Wentworth L. D.

1636 *Lord of Ely and  
 Sir Christoph. Wandes-  
 ford* L. J.

1636 Thomas *Lord Vis-  
 count Wentworth* L. D.

1639 *Lord Dillon and  
 Sir Christoph. Wandes-  
 ford* L. J.

1639  
 L. L.

1640  
 ford

1640  
 Sir V.  
 Just.

1640  
 sons  
 lace

Under  
 on the  
 the Bl.  
 Rebells

1643  
 and  
 burne  
 Person  
 for the  
 being  
 true he  
 burne  
 defend  
 Rebels  
 ed Due  
 of poor  
 flight t

## Irish.

Irish.

English.

1639 *Earl of Strafford*  
L. L.

1640 *Christoph. Wandes-*  
*ford L. D.*

1640 *Lord Dillon and*  
*Sir William Parsons L.*  
Just.

1640 *Sir William Par-*  
*sons and Sir John Bor-*  
*lace L. J.*

Under whose Government  
on the 23d. of Octob. 1641.  
the Bloody Irish most bloody  
Rebellion broke out.

1643 *Sir John Borlace*  
*and Sir Henry Tich-*  
*burne L. J.*

Persons eminently qualified  
for the time they governed,  
being both old Souldiers and  
true hearted *Englishmen*, *Tich-*  
*burne* gallantly secured and  
defended *Drogheda* against the  
Rebels, and thereby preserv-  
ed *Dublin* and the multitude  
of poor stript *English* in their  
flight thither.

Irish.

Irish.

English.

1643 Janu. 21. James  
then Marquess now Duke  
of Ormond L. L.

1650 Ulick Bourke  
Marquess of Clanriccard  
L. D.

1660 Sir Maurice Eu-  
stace Lord Chancellor,  
Roger Boyle Earl of  
Orrery and Charles  
Coote Earle of Mont-  
roth L. J.

1662. July 28. James  
Duke of Ormond L. L.

1663 May 21. Thomas  
Earl of Ossory D.

Septemb. 1665 James  
Duke of Ormond L. L.

1668 Apr. 25. Thomas  
Earl of Ossory D.

1669 Sept. 10. John  
Lord Roberts L. L.

1671  
Arch-  
Lord  
Arth-

1677  
Duke  
presen-

Irish

Irish.

English.

1660 April 21. John  
Lord Berkley L. L.

1671 Michael Boyle  
Arch-Bishop of Dublin  
Lord Chancellor and Sir  
Arthur Forbes L. J.

Septemb. 1671 John  
Lord Berkley L. L.

1672 May 21. Arthur  
Earl of Essex L. L.

1677 Aug. 24. James  
Duke of Ormond the  
present L. L.

CHAP.



## CHAP. IV.

*The Heads of the Establishment for Ireland, commencing March 25. 1676.*

### CIVIL LIST.

<i>Exchequer.</i>	<i>Yearly allowance.</i>
Lord Treasurer	336 00 00
Vice-Treasurer	50 00 00
Chancellor of the Exchequer	200 00 00
Lord Chief Baron for his	
Fee and Robes - - -	500 00 00
Second Baron	400 00 00
Third Baron	400 00 00
Prime Serjeant at Law for	
his Fee and Robes - - -	33 16 08
Second Serjeant	30 00 00
Attorney General	88 06 08
Solicitor General	88 06 08
Auditor General	184 00 08
and to him more in full of	
all Fees due to him upon	
passing Sheriffs Accounts	31 00 00
Carried forward	2341 10 08
	Surveyor

Brought over	2341 10 08
Surveyor General	60 00 00
Escheator of <i>Leinster</i>	06 13 04
Escheator of <i>Munster</i>	01 05 00
Escheator of <i>Connacht</i>	01 05 00
Escheator of <i>Ulster</i>	01 05 00
Chief Remembrancer	30 00 00
and to him in full satisfaction of all Fees due to him upon passing Sheriffs Accounts--	21 19 02
Second Remembrancer	07 15 06
and to him in full of all Fees upon passing She- riffs Accounts -----	45 06 09
Clerk of the Pipe	45 00 00
and to him in full of all Fees due to him upon passing Sheriffs Accounts -----	111 12 00
Chief Chamberlain	10 00 00
Second Chamberlain	05 00 00
Comptroller of the Pipe	07 00 00
and to him more in full of all Fees due to him upon passing Sheriffs Accounts	46 10 00
Usher of the Exchequer	12 10 00
and to him for Fees upon passing Sheriffs Accounts	11 12 06
Transcriber and Foreign Opposer -----	15 00 00
and to him for passing Accounts -----	38 15 00
carried forward	2819 19 11
	Summo-

Brought over	2819 19 11	
Summonister	07 10 00	
and to him more for the like Fees	36 08 06	
Marshal of the Four Courts	04 00 00	
Clerk of the Pells	30 00 00	
Clerk of the First Fruits and Twentieth parts	27 10 00	
and for Fees in passing Sheriffs Accounts	11 04 09	
Cryer of the Exchequer	01 13 04	
and for the like Fees	07 15 00	
Pursivants of the Exchequer for carrying Writs	71 05 00	
and for the like Fees	07 15 00	
Auditor of the Foreign Accounts and Imprests	121 13 04	
Three Commissioners of Appeals	300 00 00	
	3446 14 10	

*Court of Kings Bench.*

Lord Chief Justice	600 00 00	
Second Justice	400 00 00	
Third Justice	400 00 00	
Clerk of the Crown	007 10 00	
	1407 10 00	

*Chancery.*

## Chancery.

L Ord Chancellor	1000 00 00
L Master of the Rolls	157 09 11
Four Masters of the Chancery twenty pound each - -	80 00 00
Clerks of the Crown and Chancery - - - - -	25 00 00
Clerks of the Exchequer	35 10 00
men of	
	1297 19 11

## Court of King's Bench.

L Ord Chief Justice	500 00 00
L Second Justice	400 00 00
Third Justice	400 00 00
Prothonotary	07 10 00
	1307 10 00

## State and Patent Officers, &amp;c.

O fficers attending the State - - - - -	71589 01 10
Incidents	2187 00 00
Custom Officers	238 06 08
Creation Money	544 11 08
Perpetuities	489 15 06
Temporary Payments	9367 17 01
Concordatams	4500 00 00
To uses to be appointed by Sign Manual - - -	27000 00 00

115916 12 09½  
MILL.

## MILITARY LIST.

## General Officers.

<b>L</b> ord Lieutenant	6593 06 08
<b>M</b> arshal of <i>Ireland</i>	634 12 00
<b>M</b> uster-Master General and	
<b>C</b> lerk of the Cheques --	336 00 00
<b>S</b> ix Commissaries of the	
<b>M</b> usters - - - - -	400 0
<b>C</b> omptroller of the Musters and Cheques - - - - -	436 00 00
<b>A</b> dvocate General of the	
Army - - - - -	112 00 00
<b>C</b> hirurgeon General	112 00 00
	8623 18 08

## Officers of the Ordnance and Train of Artillery.

<b>M</b> aster of the Ordnance	453 09 00
Lieut. of the Ordnance	117 12 00
Comptroller of the Ordnance	100 00 00
Clerk of the Ammunition and	
Stores - - - - -	67 04 00
Engineer and Overseer of his	
Majesties Fortifications --	300 00 00
Inferior Officers of the	
Train of Artillery - - -	728 00 00

1766 05 00

Horse

### Horse.

Foot.

Company of Foot Guards	1128 00 00
Royal Regiment	17035 04 00
Field and Staff Officers of	
the said Regiment - -	1341 04 00
74 Companies	64646 08 00
Earl Dunbartons Regiment	19616 16 00
Sir Nich. Armourer Gover-	
nor of the New Fort	
near Kinsale - - - -	365 00 00
Total of the Military List	166392 15 08
List of Pensions	11200 00 00
of which paid to persons in England	5780 00 00
<hr/>	<hr/>
Total of His Majesties Charge	230969 02 06

A Table for Reducing Plantation Acres into English, according to the Explanatory Act; Viz. For *Leinster*, 3 d. *Munster*, 2 d. *ob.* *Connacht*, 1 d. q.

Irish. English, Acres,      Leinster.

Ir. a.	En. a.	R.	P.	Pts.	l.	s.	d.	q.
1	1	2	19	21	0	4	3	
2	3	0	38	42	0	9	3	
3	4	3	17	63	1	2	2	
4	0	1	36	84	1	7	2	
5	8	0	15	105	0	2	1	
6	9	2	35	5	2	5	1	
7	11	1	14	26	2	10	0	
8	12	3	33	44	3	2	3	
9	14	2	12	68	3	7	3	
10	16	0	31	89	4	0	2	
20	32	1	23	57	8	1	1	
30	48	2	15	25	12	1	3	
40	64	3	6	114	16	2	2	
50	80	3	38	82	1	0	3	0
60	97	0	30	50	1	4	3	2
70	113	1	22	18	1	8	4	1
80	129	2	13	107	1	12	4	3
90	145	3	5	75	1	16	5	1
100	161	3	37	43	2	0	6	0
500	809	3	26	94	10	2	5	3
1000	1619	3	13	67	20	4	11	2
5000	80991	0	27	39	101	4	9	2
10000	16198	1	15	5	202	9	7	0

lish, in the several Provinces of *Ireland*; according to every English Statute Acre in the Province of *Ulster*, 2 d.

Munster.

Ulster.

Connagh.

l.	s.	d.	q.	l.	s.	d.	q.	l.	s.	d.	q.
0	3	3		0	3	1		0	2	2	
0	7	1		0	6	2		0	4	3	
0	11	0		0	1	3		0	7	1	
1	2	2		1	4	0		0	9	3	
1	6	1		1	4	1		1	0	0	
1	9	3		1	7	2		1	2	2	
2	1	2		1	10	3		1	5	0	
2	5	1		2	2	0		1	7	2	
2	8	3		2	6	1		1	9	3	
4	0	2		2	8	2		2	0	1	
6	1	3		5	4	3		4	0	2	
9	1	1		8	1	1		6	1	0	
12	1	3		10	9	2		8	1	1	
15	2	1		13	6	0		10	1	2	
18	2	3		16	2	2		12	1	3	
1	1	1		18	10	2		14	2	0	
1	4	2		1	7	1		16	2	1	
1	7	4	0	1	4	3	2	18	2	3	
1	10	4	2	1	7	0	0	0	3	0	
7	11	1	1	6	14	11	3	1	2	3	
15	3	6	2	13	9	11	3	10	2	5	3
75	18	7	0	67	9	30	250	12	4	2	
151	17	2	1	134	19	9	0	101	4	9	0



## C H A P. V.

The Establishment of the Subsidies of  
*Ireland.*

## Nobility Subsidy.

Duke of Ormond	100	00	00
Earl of Cork	110	00	00
Marquess of Antrim	60	00	00
Kildare	56	13	00
Thomond	40	00	00
Strafford	35	00	00
Clanriccard	35	00	00
Castlehaven	02	10	00
Roscommon	15	00	00
Londonderry	10	00	00
Desmond	10	00	00
Meath	15	00	00
Barrymore	30	00	00
Carbury	15	00	00
Arglafs	20	00	00

Earl of

Earl

Chap  
Earl of  
G  
Vale  
Dillo  
Loft  
Swo  
Kilm  
Con  
May  
Savil  
Lane

Donnegall	50 00 00
Cavan	02 10 00
Clanbrazil	30 00 00
Inchiquin	10 00 00
Clancarty	40 00 00
Orrery	20 00 00
Montrath	15 00 00
Drogheda	40 00 00
Waterford	23 00 00
Mountalexander	05 00 00
Castlemain	20 00 00
Arran	15 00 00
Carlingford	15 00 00
Longford	15 00 00
Tyrone	15 00 00
Raneleigh	15 00 00

## Viscounts.

Randison	10 00 00
Wilmot	10 00 00
Valentia	30 00 00
Dillon	20 00 00
Loftus of Ely	12 10 00
Swords	12 10 00
Kilmurrey	12 10 00
Conway	30 00 00
Mayo	10 00 00
Savil	20 00 00
Lanesborough	10 00 00

Castlestone	20 00 00
Chaworth	20 00 00
Scudamore <i>of</i> Sligoe	12 10 00
Lumley	12 10 00
Strangford	12 10 00
Wenman <i>of</i> Fryan	10 00 00
Molleux	17 10 00
Fairfax	12 10 00
Fitz Williams	07 00 00
Rathcoole	12 10 00
Bareford	12 10 00
Bulkley	15 00 00
Ogle	12 10 00
Bronkart	12 10 00
Cullen	20 00 00
Gallmoy	03 00 00
Kingsland	20 00 00
Shannon	12 10 00
Dromore	12 10 00
Cloin	10 00 00
Mazareen	10 00 00
Cholmondlegh	12 10 00
Fanshaw <i>of</i> Donnamore	05 00 00
Duncannon	12 10 00
Fitz Harding	20 00 00
Clare	20 00 00
Charlemont	10 00 00
Powers Court	10 00 00
Granard	10 00 00

Lord

## Lords Barons.

B Ermingham	01 00 00
B Coursey	02 00 00
Kerry	10 00 00
Heath	05 00 00
Cahir	05 00 00
Montjoy	12 10 00
Folliot	15 00 00
Maynard	15 00 00
Gorges	05 00 00
Digby	10 00 00
Fitz Williams <i>of Lifford</i>	10 00 00
Herbert	20 00 00
Baltimore	10 00 00
Brereton <i>of Laghlin</i>	05 00 00
Colrain	10 00 00
Sherard <i>of Leitrim</i>	10 00 00
Strabane	05 00 00
Hawley <i>of Dunmote</i>	05 00 00
Allington <i>of Killard</i>	20 00 00
Collooney	10 00 00
Santry	10 00 00
Glanawly	10 00 00
Altham	10 00 00

## Ladies Subsidies.

C	Lanrickard	20	00	00
C	Thomond	10	00	00
A	Antrim	11	13	00
R	Roscommon	05	00	00
C	Clonbrazill	10	00	00
C	Cloncarty	15	00	00
M	Mountalexander	06	00	00
G	Glamoy	03	00	00
F	Firconnell	04	13	00
M	Maffareene	05	00	00
S	Strabane	02	00	00
<hr/>				
total 92 06 00				

Subsidies of the several Bishopricks of  
the Diocess of Ardmagh.

Arch-Bishoprick of Ardmagh	180	17	08
Bishoprick of Meath	206	13	00
Bishoprick of Londonderry	142	08	00
Bishoprick of Clogher	105	08	00
Bishoprick of Conner	44	00	00
Bishoprick of Rapho	86	12	00
Bishoprick of Dromore	20	12	00
Bishoprick of Down	16	16	00
<hr/>			
Bishoprick			

Bishopricks of Killmore	59	08	00
Bishopricks of Ardagh	12	12	00
<i>total</i>	875	06	08

*Subsidies of the several Bishopricks of the Diocese of Dublin.*

Arch-Bishopricks of Dublin	247	14	00
Bishopricks of Kildare	101	12	00
Bishopricks of Offory	88	00	00
Bishopricks of Fernes	111	08	00
Bishopricks of Leighlin	44	08	00
<i>total</i>	593	02	00

*Subsidies of the several Bishopricks of the Diocese of Cashell.*

Arch-Bishopricks of Cashell	51	12	00
B. of Waterford and Lismore	102	09	06
Bishopricks of Cork and Rois	32	16	00
Bishopricks of Cloyne	41	04	00
Bishopricks of Limerick	31	12	00
Bishopricks of Killalow	20	08	00
Bishopricks of Ardfart	04	05	00
<i>total</i>	284	06	00

*Subsidies*

*Subsidies of the several Bishopricks of  
the Diocese of Tuam.*

<i>Arch-Bishoprick of Tuam.</i>	22	16	00
<i>Bishoprick of Elphin</i>	34	04	00
<i>Bishopr. of Athconry &amp; Killala</i>	12	00	00
<i>Bishoprick of Clonfart</i>	30	08	00
<i>Bishoprick of Kilmacough</i>	07	00	00
	<hr/>		
<i>total</i>	106	08	00

*Provincial Subsidies.*

*Leinster.*

<i>City of Dublin</i>	601	18	01	0b
<i>County of Dublin</i>	551	18	01	0b
<i>County of Catherlough</i>	147	10	07	0b
<i>County of Kildare</i>	477	12	10	0b
<i>County of Kilkenny</i>	479	02	00	
<i>City of Kilkenny</i>	44	02	04	0b
<i>County of Wexford</i>	323	10	09	
<i>County of Wicklow</i>	154	16	06	
<i>Queens County</i>	242	13	09	
<i>Kings County</i>	224	09	03	
<i>County of Longford</i>	145	07	00	
<i>County of West Meath</i>	356	17	04	0b
	<i>County</i>			

County of Meath	659 13 04 ob
County of Louth	217 13 09
Villa de Drogheda	053 11 06 ob
total	4580 08 04 ob

## Munster.

County and City of Cork	1364 18 00
City of Waterford	97 01 00
County of Waterford	265 15 00
County of Tiperary	1039 17 00
City of Limerick	97 01 00
County of Limerick	492 08 00
County of Kerry	209 19 03
total	3566 19 03

## Connacht.

County of Gallway	153 15 01 ob
Town of Gallway	82 10 06
County of Roscommon	350 17 04 ob
County of Mayo	385 18 04 ob
County of Leitrim	160 05 06
County of Sleigo	295 10 03
County of Clare	386 14 06
total	2515 11 07 ob

## Ulster.

## Ulster.

<i>County of Antrim and Town of Carickfergus</i>	402	13	06
<i>County of Down</i>	387	16	02
<i>County of Donnagall</i>	461	19	06
<i>Coun. &amp; Cit. of Londonderry</i>	374	01	10 ob
<i>County of Ardmagh</i>	258	15	03
<i>County of Monaghan</i>	267	05	03
<i>County of Cavan</i>	272	09	09
<i>County of Fermanagh</i>	237	07	06
<i>County of Tyrone</i>	367	18	10 ob
<hr/>			
<i>total</i>	3030	07	08
<hr/>			
<i>total of the four Provinces</i>	13693	06	11

CHAP.



## C H A P. VI.

## Of Coyns.

INSisting more largely on the original Increase and Value of all the species of Mony, that have been or now are currant in the world, in my *Treatise of Traffick*, I shall only here briefly insist on this one Question, it having been more controverted with les agreement in the Council of Trade than any other point.

*Quest.* Whether it be advisable for the Government of Ireland to inhance the Value or debase the Allay of the currant Mony.

*Answe.* 1. Such as have been in the negative have maintained their Arguments from these Reasons.

1. It would be a Dishonour to the Government, Coyn being the Standard or Measure of all other things, it would weaken our Credit in our foreign Traffique.

And also infringe the Laws of foreign Commerce, and nothing more reflects upon a Prince or State than being inconstant in their Measures and Weights respecting Trade.

2. Silver and Gold being foreign materials, we by enhancing their Value raise the rate of a foreign Specie on our selves.

3. If we raise its value, our Neighbour Princes, &c. will rise also, and then we are where we were.

4. It lessens the Repute of the Kings Revenue when estimated by its currant Value much above its intrinsique.

2. It is a great damage to the Subject.

1. All our Lands, Rents, Wares, &c. are proportionably undervalued, as we enhance or debase our Coyn, when the currant value of one Hundred pound in our Coffer is intrinsiquely worth but ninety five pound, our Estate is no more really, though reputively.

2. It will cause Controversies and Suites of Law in the paying of Rents and Specialties, when the Condition is currant lawful mony of and in England.

3. No man knows what he sells his Goods for, when he knows what sort of Mony he shall receive payment in.

In brief, if our Mony, which must rule the Price of all things, be mutable and uncertain, no man can make a sure and clear estate of what he hath; Contracts, Bargains, Rents, Taxes, Wages will all be uncertain.

These Objections contain the Substance of what were offered in the negative.

Now though it is granted these Notions are very sound, as to a well settled Commonwealth; yet, we say, there is no general Rule without

an exception, for sick States as well as sick Bodies Physick is more necessary than Food; and that this practice of enhancing the Rate and debasing the Value of the Coyn, hath been used by the wisest of Statesmen upon some urgent cases, our Histories give plentiful examples of.

First, for the debasing the Allay, though *Monsieur Bodin* argues against it, yet himself gives many instances as well in his own Countrey of *France* as in all other Kingdoms and States of *Europe*, he determines the finest Gold to be 23 Carrets, and Silver 11 Deniers, that is one 24th. part Alloy in Gold, and one 12th. part in Silver, and yet blames the Goldsmiths of *France* 688. that they made their work at 20. yea, oft-times at 19 Carrets, and so it had about the 5th. part of Silver or Copper Allay, and then spend five leaves in instances both of former and latter times of Princes changing the finest, and value of their Coins, which may be not only lawful, but expedient in these and the like causes: First, in time of Wars, or difference of Neighbour-Princes, who may contrive to draw out our Money from us; in order to weaken our hands, and Moneys being deservedly called the sinews of War; which project *Francis the First* carried on by settling a Bank at *Lions*, declaring Interest at 8 per C. the general rate in *Italy*, &c. being 5. he drew a great part of the Money of *Italy* and *Germany* into his custody. *Bodin* 673. the Emperor *Charles the fifth*, and *Henry the 8th. of England* did the like, *Holl.* 674. From *German* Merchants for 100000 Crowns at 12 per C. and about the same time,

time, *viz.* 1526. by Proclamation on the 6<sup>th</sup>. of September enhance the rate of his own Coyn, and raised the value of Gold to 45 shillings, and Silver to 36 shillings 9 pence; and again in the year 1544. the 35<sup>th</sup>. of his Reign proclaimed Gold to 48. and Silver at 48. the Ounce in value, and at the same time coyn base Mony, to wit, pieces of 1 s. 6 d. 4 d. 2 d. 1 d. and continue currant at that rate until the 5. of Edward the 6. when they were brought down, the Shilling to 9 pence, the Groat to 3 d. &c. and so continued until the 2. of Elizabeth: and although the Queen was exceeding curious in the affairs of her Mint, and tender of her Honour therein, yet was convinc'd by her Council, there was a necessity of debasing her Mony for Ireland; the Irish War against Tyrone that cost her 160000 l. per ann. would drain England dry of Coyn; the Arguments Buckhurst Lord Treasurer, &c. used, were,

1. It would abate the Charge of the War a fourth part, when her Shilling currant in Ireland was not worth above 9 pence.

2. It would much weaken the Hands of the Rebels, who drew most of the good Mony into their power for Provisions, &c. and made use of it to supply themselves with Arms and Ammunition, &c. from Foreigners, which a course Coyn would prevent.

3. It would discourage Foreigners from aiding them, when they considered they must receive their Pay in bad Mony, &c.

Upon which consideration the Mony she after

sent

sent was debased in its Allay a fourth part Brass, the *Irish* shilling currant being but nine pence intrinsique value.

And it is notorious that *France*, *Holland*, and most part of the Hance Towns in *Germany*, as they have had as good Mony as the world affords, so they have as bad, which stands them in great stead, as to their petty Commerce, that the Tradesmen oft times give Exchange to have the Rix Dollar turned into base Mony of currant value, though not the sixth part of the intrinsique; so that although *Monsieur Bodin*, and others of his opinion, deserve the esteem of knowing and judicious persons; yet I judge the contrary Practice of all Princes and States we have any account of may ballance them; that such may be the state of a Commonwealth, that debasing and enhancing Coyn may be not only expedient, but necessary:

1. In case of War, as before.
2. If other Neighbour Princes inhance or debase their Coyn, as in the Examples mentioned.
3. In case of Scarcity, and thereby increase of the rate or value of Bulloin: for if *England* had not enhanced their Coyn as Bulloin rose, from 26 in *Edward* the thirds time to 60 pence in *Queen Elizabeths*, it is not reasonable to believe *England* would have had a Silver spoon or a six pence left: and if Bulloin should yet increase in value to six or seven shillings *per Ounce*, if we enhance not our Coyn proportionably, it is not rational to believe we shall have a penny left.

*Errata per contra*  
Pag. in line 4. for  
36 s. 9 d. read 3 s.  
9 d. in line 6. for  
Silver at 48 s. the  
Ounce r. Silver at  
4 s. the Ounce.

4. In case of the wrong Ballance of Trade, there is a necessity to do something to alter it, or the Kingdom's drained of its Coyn; for so much as we buy more than we sell must be paid for in Mony, as is shewn in that Chapter: and there is but two ways to reform the Ballance of Trade, which is either to increase the Quantity and improve the Quality of our natural Growth, or restrain Consumption of Foreign Goods: the first is a work of time, and the latter difficult to effect: and the most rational Expedient to stem the Tide till it turn is, to make our Mony a worse and our Commodity a better Commodity for Transportation: for the Merchant only considers what is most gainful; and whilst our Coyn is the best Commodity to export, he will not meddle with our Goods: but if Gold and Silver were the best Commodity to import, and the worst to export, there would need no other Law but the Common Law of Interest to preserve and increase Coyn.

And although it might be more convenient for me to keep to generals, and leave Expedients to those more concerned, and capable to reform: yet, considering I may be misunderstood, I judge it necessary to explain my self more particular in this case, there being extreams on both hands: for the having of no good Mony in the Body politick would be as dangerous as no good Blood in the Body natural.

First, I would propose that all our good Mony, either English or foreign Coyn, that is near the intrinsique

intrinsique value it goes for. *viz.* Gold of two in twenty four, and Silver of one in twelve Allay may inhance five per *Cent.* above its current rate in the Countries where we Trade, which cannot fall heavy upon any but future Cofferers; and I think Five *per Cent.* is too low a Fine upon them, and its increase of value would bring out all Mony now coffered.

Secondly, that all our course Mony may be altered in its specie, and coyned in Shillings, Six pences and Threepences, to its present intrinsique value, *viz.* the first rate in Shillings, the second in Sixpences, and the worst into Threepences; whereby all persons will have their own at the same current and intrinsique value they delivered it into the Mint, and the Mint deducting the Charge of Coyning, which is so inconsiderable, the Mony will be little the worse, and yet the Interest of all persons secured.

Thirdly, A certain Sum, as the Government may judge convenient, of very course Mony, about the Allay of the Dutch double Stiver be coyned in Twopence and Penny pieces.

Fourthly, That the like proportionable Sum be coyned of Copper, or rather Tin compounded with Copper (it being our own Material) in Halfpence and Farthings; these three last sorts of Mony we shall be sure to keep, which of themselves will be sufficient to manage our Home-trade, if our best Mony should be drained from us, and if our native Growth and Manufactures will not furnish us with foreign Commodities suf-

ficient for our necessary Consumption, we are better without them.

If we had fewer Silk-Shops and Taverns, it would be no great Grievance, whilst we want not Drapers and Mercers Shops, and Ale-houses, &c. and no Country in the world less depends upon Foreign supply than *Ireland* for Necessaries, and it is improvident to consume ourselves in Superfluities.

---

THE



## THE SUPPLEMENT.

### *Objection.*

IF the Government of *Ireland* by its own Members be of so great advantage as you affirm, *Part 2. Chap. 3.* to the Trade and Wealth of that Kingdom, whence was it the Trade, &c. were no more promoted under the Justices 1661, 1662? and why did not the Duke of *Ormond* in his seven years Government no more improve the Trade and Wealth of *Ireland*?

### *Answer.*

1. Though the then Justices were members of *Ireland's* Common-wealth, and consequently interested in its common Good; yet the various Interests of *Ireland* being undetermined, all they could do was to keep all quiet, by keeping each party in expectation matters might go better with them upon the Settlement than they feared, the chief Contrivances of the people of each Faction being how to wipe themselves clean with each others foul Clouts, by alledging something to extenuate

tenuate their own and aggravate others Offences.

2. The great Confusion the Duke found that Kingdom in at his landing, all Interests being unsettled, and Minds unsatisfied, both which were necessary to be composed and determined, before the Improvement of the Kingdom by Trade could be thought on; for till men knew their Interest in the Country, as to their real Estates, they had little reason to be much concerned in improving their personal. Uncertain Titles to Lands are always attended with certain omissions of Improvements; for men are not willing to build Houses for others to dwell in, nor to improve Lands for others to possess.

Which was then more notoriously the state of the Inhabitants of *Ireland* in general than usually befalls a Country, which will appear, if you do but weigh the many distinct and contrary Interests, producing several violent opposite Factions and Parties that *Ireland* was under at the Dukes access to the Government. And for your Information or Satisfaction herein, take this brief view of the state from the year 1660. to the year 1662. the Duke arrived.

1. The *Irish* themselves, notwithstanding the body of them; could not be unsensible of their Guilt in the bloody massacring of so many hundreds of thousands of *English* in cold blood; yet they alledge their Displeasure was not against the King, nor against the Kings good Subjects, but for their own preservation, against the fury of the Puritan party,

party, then so much favoured by the Parliament of *England*: and therefore they hoped the worst construction would not be put upon their Actions; but that the edge of that sharp Law of *Decimo Septimo* against their Estates, passed by the King under some sort of necessity to satisfie the discontented people of *England*, might be blunted.

A second sort, of them that pleaded they were not concerned in the bloody Massacre and first Rising; for they tendred their Service to the Crown till they observ'd the Commination to be so general, and themselves so far suspected, they were not trusted, that they had only choice which party they would be ruined by; and therefore fell in with the rest of their Country men, hoping by their Interest in their Councils to prevent further Extremities, and to keep them in a capacity of accepting reasonable terms of Submission to the Government of *England*.

A third sort pleaded they accepted of the Cessation 1643. and closed in with the Peace in the years 1646, 1648. and from that time were faithful to the Crown, and bore Arms in the defence of its Interest against the Usurpers; and many of them, after they could do the King no further Service in *Ireland*, served under the Banner of his Friends beyond Sea, without the least defect, until the time his of Majesties happy Restoration, and from thence they concluded they had made amends for all their former faults.

There were a fourth sort, who, though least in number, yet most deserving, that pleaded In-

nocency, as without any defect in the whole Transaction, and they expected not only their own Estates, but Reparation for past Sufferings.

And as these several Interests and Factions of the *Irish* thus divided them into parties, so was it with the *English* Protestants.

1. The unspotted Royalists, that both in the *English* and *Irish* War never served under other but the Kings Banner, they expected to be both first and best provided for, who had a special provision made for them, though not what they expected, by the Act of Settlement, under the denomination of the Forty nine Men.

2. Such who had served the King faithfully in his Wars in *England* and *Ireland* until the Kings Government was removed, and then accepted of Employments under the Usurpers in *Ireland*, and these were generally known by the denomination of the Old Protestant party.

3. They which seemed to be the most considerable, both for Number and Interest, being possest of the chief Employments both Military and Civil at the Kings Restoration was the new Interest of Adventurers and Souldiers, the first claiming Propriety by the Act of *Decimo septimo*, and the other by their Service against the *Irish*, in which they alledged they had done the King good Service, though by his Enemies Commissions; and they being suspicious the Lands of *Ireland* would not hold out to satisfie the Expectations of all those Interests, it begat Factions both between

the  
party  
T  
script  
those  
Subsc  
bling  
curity  
Arms  
vices  
have  
ment  
Must  
the o  
in the  
such  
ons in  
which  
lists a  
to turn  
No  
the w  
difficu  
Hand  
produ  
Duke  
of op  
and e  
other  
each  
to a f

the Adventurer and Souldier, and between each party among themselves.

Those Adventurers that had payed their Subscriptions in due time, pleaded Priviledge before those who failed in that point, then the original Subscribers found themselves aggrieved the doubling Ordinance men should invade their first Security: so amongst the Souldiers those then in Arms pleaded in consideration of their good Services in the Kings Restoration they deserved to have the Kings Favours in the the Act of Settlement limited to such as were mustered in the next Muster after the Kings Interest was avowed, but the others alledged, they never intended to bring in the King, until they had run themselves into such confusions in their Counsels and Convulsions in their State they knew not what to do, which gave a fair opportunity to those Royalists amongst them, in that shuffle of the Cards, to turn up the Kings Interest Trumps.

Now these many different Interests rendred the work of *Irelands* Settlement both tedious and difficult, that required both a skilful and tender Hand to compose; for these contrary Interests produced contrary Humours, which, until the Duke of *Ormond* landed, work'd to that height of opposition, that every Eye was filled with envy, and every Brow with indignation one against the other, that if they met on the Road, or passed by each other in the Street, contempt and prejudice to a strange degree might be read in their deportment;

ment; yet all the Factions, unless that termed **Fanatick**, bore up with a competent confidence, but the generality of that party seemed to be much dejected, every day more and more withering in their hopes, in so much that many of them were preparing for voluntary **Exile**, some to **Plantations in America**, others into **Holland**, or such parts of **England**, as they supposed obscurity might give them most quiet and safety, and in order thereunto sold considerable Interests in this Kingdom at very low rates, some giving one moyety, some less, to Favourites at Court, to secure the Remain to themselves.

But soon after, understanding that the **Act of Settlement** was neer perfected, and that His Majesty was gratiouly inclined to make no considerable distinction of Interests therein, nor exception of persons included in his gratiou Act of **Indemnity**, and that the Duke of **Ormonde**, who of all men had been most disobliged by the late Powers, they feared would have been their greatest Enemy, was the most concerned to secure their Interest in the common Bottom out of his Love to the common **English Interest of Ireland**, and was also nominated when the **Act** was perfected to coine over as Lord Lieutenant, to see it executed; they then began to take heart, and inclined to see the issue of his Government before they would further unsettle themselves, considering that if his Humour were moderte towards them, he had an Interest and Spirit big enough to strengthen his own Resolutions, and not to

be

be diverted from the practice of his own Reason for fear or favour of any of the Parties, which was not the case under the present Justices, which soon after his arrival they found made good beyond their expectations, having equal access with others into his presence, and that with good acceptance. and also finding they could have equal Justice at the Court of Claims, and other the Kings Courts, with other the Kings Subjects, they gave over their thoughts of removing, and disposed themselves to industry in the Country, or Cities, as their Estates and Educations capacitated them.

Now it is not to be expressed what sudden alterations this made in the Honour and Deportment of the persons of several Interests one towards another; this equal Countenance and Justice of the chief Governour begat an equal Familiarity betwixt the people of different parties, and so deep a resentment had the principal persons of that party, before most dejected, they agreed, as many of the Field Officers as were in Dublin, to make a solemne return of Thanks to the Duke, and withal a Tender of their Service to his Son the Earl of Ossory, then Lieutenant General of the Army, that they were ready with their Lives and Estates when his Majesties Affairs required, to engage themselves against the Kings Enemies under his Conduct, which was courteously accepted by the Earl, who with many affectionate Expressions, in his sweet obliging way, assured

assured them when the Kings Affairs required, he should highly esteem their Company and Assistance.

From which time that party esteemed it their duty, to study how to approve themselves not only loyal Subjects to their King, but grateful Servants to his Vice-Roy.

Thus all Interest being determined by the Act of Settlement, and thereby all Humours composed; each party and every person bent their minds and industry to defend their Titles to what the said Act gave them a pretence unto in the Court of Claims, where such a brisk Trade was driven, in purchasing and prosecuting Titles to Land, no other Trade or Manufactures were thought on, the bulk of the Cash of the Kingdom being swallowed up in that gulph.

Yet in that time the Duke considering, Land in *Ireland* would little differ from Land in *America*, without Inhabitants to plant and improve it, was very inquisitive after the Intrigue of Trade and Manufacture, if he met with any persons that he apprehended were acquainted with those Affairs: and in *May 1664.* gave a Commission to a Council of Trade, with full and large Instructions for them to govern their Proceedings by, which are printed in my Preface, and most persons of Quality having by that time gained possession of great scopes of Land, in several of their Lots they found old ruined Towns; and, discerning no other way to get them planted, grew eager of Manufactures, to whom the Lord Lieutenant gave all possible

incou-

incouragement, that within a few years after we had erected by private persons on their own accounts many considerable Manufactures.

In *Leinster* Alderman *Daniel Hutchenson* at *Abby*, Earl of *Arran* at *Tullagh*, Lord Chancellor *Eustace* at *Baltinglass*, Esquire *Parsons* at the *Byrr*, the publick Manufacture of *Chappelized* on the Kings account, besides several other lesser Attempts.

In *Munster* the Earl of *Orrery* at *Charlevil*, several Dutch Merchants in *Limerick* and *Clare*, Baron *Hartstongue* at the *Bruff*.

Besides very considerable addition of Cloth, Bays, Stuffs and Stockins at *Cork* and *Bandon*, &c.

In *Connaught* the Lord *Kingston* at *Abby Boyle*, Sir *James Cuff* at

Some time after the Duke, on his particular account, attempted a Manufacture at *Callen*, and also gave great incouragement to some Undertakers to erect the most considerable Manufacture *Ireland* ever saw, for Cloth and Stuffs, at *Clonmell*, which for some years employed many hundreds of people, and made as good Cloth and Stuffs as *England* could produce.

In *Ulster* the Lord *Dungannon* at *Dundalk*, but the *Scotch* and *Irish* in that Province addicting themselves to spinning of Linnen Yarn, attained to vast quantities of that Commodity, which they transported to their great profit, the conveniency of which drew thither multitudes of Linnen Weavers, that my opinion is, there is not a greater quantity of

of Linnen product in the like circuit in Europe: and although the generality of their Cloth fourteen years since was sleisie and thin, yet of late it is much improved to a good fineness and strength, and will in all probability increase daily both in quantity and quality; but all the other Manufactures mentioned, after the Dukes removal from the Government, dwindled away to nothing, except two or three that like sick folk are ready to expire; the Causes of which and Remedies I shall shew at large in my Discourse of Manufacture, supposing this account of the state of Affairs all the time of the Dukes first Government is a sufficient Answer to the Objection, and corroborates my Assertion that it is the Interest of *Ireland* to be governed by persons peculiarly interested in its prosperity.

---

Object.

## PROTESTANTS.

Valentia  
Maryborough  
Castleton  
Chaworth  
Sligoe  
Waterford  
Strangford  
Tuam  
Cashell  
Carlow  
Cullen  
Shannon  
Mazareene  
Dromoor  
Dungarvan  
Dungannon  
Kells  
Fitz Harding  
Clare  
Charlemont  
Powerscourt  
Blefinton  
Granard  
Lanesborough  
Ross

## PAPISTS.

Gormanston  
Fermoy  
Rathcoole  
Barefore  
Brunker  
Galmoy  
Kingland  
Mountgarret  
Dowth  
Evagh  
Kilmallock  
Ikerine  
Glanmaleyra  
Claine  
Downe  
Tracy.

## PROTESTANTS.

## Barons.

Kinsale  
Kerry  
Heath  
Mountjoy  
Foliot  
Maynard  
Dundalk  
Digbey  
Lifford  
Herbert  
Loghlin  
Coleraine  
Leitrim  
Donamore  
Blaney  
Killard  
Kingston  
Colooney  
Santry  
Lowth  
Glawnally  
Altham  
Castleward.

## PAPISTS.

## Barons.

Athenry  
Cahir  
Baltimore  
Strabane  
Slane  
Trimleston  
Dunsany  
Dunboyn  
Upper Offory  
Castleconnell  
Brittas.

Besides, the Protestants have the advantage of our reverend Protestant Judges, and the Kings learned Counsels, to advise and countenance the Protestant Interest in *Ireland* in that highest Court.

---

*An Answer to the Objection pag. 93.*

IT is objected in pag. 93. of the 2d. Part, if the bloody Massacre in 1641, &c. proceeded not from any depravity from Principles of Humanity, nor from any spirit of revenge or personal hatred against the Protestants, but only from their bloody Tenents in matters of Religion, as you affirm; it were necessary to instance what Points of their Religion they are that render them so dangerous, they professing themselves Christians, &c.

**Answer,**

As I there hint, it is not the Religion of the Church of *Rome*, viz. what relates to Faith and Worship, but the Policies of the Court of *Rome* that renders them so incompatible with civil Order and humane Society: multitudes of Christians live safely amongst Turks and Pagans in *Asia*, *Africa* and *America*, without danger of Massacres or Assassinations on the account of Religion; though they have no Law of true Religion to influence them, yet the Law of Humanity is not wholly obliterated; they know what it is to do as they would be done by; as *Gage* and other Historians of the *Spanish West Indians* inform us, those miserable Pagans will ask what place the *Spaniard* goes to after death, vehemently declaring, they will not worship that God whose Servants

vants are so cruel, lest they should be as barbarously used by them in the other world.

And as their inhumane bloody cruelty is condemned by the Law of Nature, so much more by all moral and divine Laws.

Therefore what I shall insist on shall be such Tenents as are not only against all Christian but Moral Principles, nay against the common Law of Nature and Nations, such as render humane Society more dangerous than brutish, who prey not on nor devour those of their own kind, but rather unite their strength in common dangers for common safety.

In the stating of which I shall observe this method :

1. Propose the Principles themselves, and shew you what they are, and how esteemed by their own Authors.
2. To observe their original from whence they proceed.
3. The Authority by which they are approved and confirmed, and by whom rejected and condemned.
4. Their natural Consequences what they must produce.
5. The actual or practical Operation of them, what Work they have already done in the world.
6. Their Inconsistency with the just Power of Princes and States, &c.
7. Shall give some Reasons why it is not only the Duty but the Interest of the Irish Papists

to reject and explode them above all other Papists in the world.

First Sect shews what those Principles are that are so incompatible with humane Society and civil Peace.

It may be said of them as the unclean Spirit replied to Christ, *Mark 15.* *they are legions*; the detection and rejection of which hath engaged many of our Protestant Authors to write many great Volumes to confute them; as *Dn. Fulk, Willet, Field, Jewell, &c.* and later, *Chillingworth, Stillingfleet, Poole*; and of *Ireland Bishop Usher, Bramhall, Taylor, &c.* with several of our dissenting Divines, as *Mr. Baxter, &c.* besides many *German and French Protestant Doctors.*

But, to avoid prolixity, I shall chiefly observe what is asserted by the Author of the *Mystery of Jesuitism*, who is so thorough a Papist, that he asserts the Church of *Rome* to be the only true *Mystery of Church*, out of which there is no Salvation: and *Jesuitism* therefore his Testimony and the Doctors of *Sorbon, &c.* whom he vindicates in their opposition to their Casuists and Schoolmen, &c. is without exception. But that they may be known by their proper names I shall stile them *Jesuitical Tridentine Tenents*; the Jesuits laid the Cockatrice eggs, and the Council of *Trent* hatch'd them into flying Serpents, into mortal stinging Scorpions; as I shall observe in the 5th. Section.

The first born of this viperous brood was the Popes personal Infallibility, which though contended for from *Boniface 3.* yet was never re-

ceived nor imposed as an Article of Faith until that illegal Council of Trent, but attributed to General Councils only: but this was so needful a point, without which they could never have attained that one thing necessary the Popes personal Supremacy: and of these two Parents were begot that litter of bloody Tenents, which (as I shall shew Sect. 5.) hath since made Christendom an Achel-dama, or field of Blood.

M. J. p. 71. I. Their Doctrine of probable Opinions, whereby they may not only reject all Doctrines of Faith, &c. If two, nay if one grave Doctor maintain the grossest Error, it is a probable Truth.

But they thereby justify the declining all Rules of Morality.

M. J. p. 78, 83. 1. No man is bound to obey his Superior, though the superior Opinion be the more probable, nay though just; but he may embrace what is most acceptable to himself.

pag. 91. 2. It is lawful to kill a man for a Box o<sup>3</sup> th<sup>3</sup> ear either given or offered, and to kill an Informer, a Witness or Judge, if he suspect they will be corrupt.

pag. 94. 3. To kill a man for the Lye, or opprobrious speeches, affrontive signs or gestures.

pag. 97. 4. If a man take our Goods to the value of a Crown, it is no sin to kill him.

pag. 97. 5. If there be reason to suspect a man will disgrace him by opprobrious speeches it is lawful to kill him.

pag. 98. 6. To kill a Jansenist if he reflect upon their Society, much more a Hugonite.

For the justifying of these Opinions is cited *Eſ-  
ober, Molina, Tanerus, Be-  
canus, Reginaldus, Lay-  
man, Lessius, Amicus, Filusius, Carramuel* and other  
Jesuits.

7. *Judges may receive Gifts, and give their  
Sentence in a probable Opinion against a more pro- pag. 103,  
bable Opinion in his own Judgment, cited Castro, 104.  
Palata, Escobar and Layman.*

8. *If a man gain an Estate by violence, rapine,  
and extortion, &c. in order to his honorable Sub-  
ſtance, rather than it should be scattered amongst his  
Creditors, he may turn Bankrupt, and delude his pag. 108,  
Creditors with a good Conscience; cited Escobar, 109.  
Lessius, &c.*

9. *It is lawful, nay charitable, to direct a Thief  
about to rob a poor man, to quit him and rob a rich pag. 109.  
man; Vasquez, Escobar, &c.*

10. *If a man entreat a Souldier to beat his  
Neighbour, or fire his House, that hath offended him, pag. 109,  
he is not obliged to repair him, especially in Ire- 110.  
land.*

11. *Goods purchased by Crimes, as by Murder,  
&c. is lawfully posſeſt, and the person not obliged page 112,  
to make reſtitution, Escobar, &c. 113.*

12. *He then asserts the Doctrine of Equivo-  
cation and Mental Reservation, and how to have  
a false thing believed for a truth without lying, use-  
ful to baffle a true and to prove a sham Plot; vid.  
Ursinus p. 197.*

13. *Saith Sanchez, a man may swear he hath  
not done a thing he really hath, by understanding page 112.  
within himſelf, that he did it not on ſuch or ſuch a*

day, or before he was born, &c. this is a thing of great convenience on many occasions, and is always necessary or advantageous: and is absolutely necessary when confessing the truth would discover Plots against Heretical Princes, &c. or any ways reflect on the Catholick Cause.

p. 130. 14. *Promises oblige not when a man hath no intention to engage himself when he makes them: this is a probable Opinion; for more than two grave Doctors assert it.*

p. 132. 15. *A man may lawfully deflower a Virgin if she consent; provided he direct his intention aright, to pass for a Gallant, &c. though the Father hath just cause to be troubled at it; yet neither she nor the person to whom she prostitutes her self is guilty of sin: and lest any bold Heretick should presume to question the truth of this necessary Point they give this reason for it: For the Maid is in possession of her Virginity as well as her Body, she may dispose of it as she pleases, and to whom she pleases.*

A necessary Doctrine for the better keeping the Vow of Chastity.

p. 134. 16. *Saith Escobar, a wicked intention, as happily looking on a Woman with an impure desire, joyn'd with that of bearing Mass as a man oft binders not a man from fully performing the duty: especially in Venus Temple.*

Ad M. 7. 17. *That an Ecclesiastick surprised in Adultery by the Womans Husband may lawfully kill him in his own defence (saith Escobar.) The merit of the*  
p. 94. *Murder is to expiate the sin of Adultery.*

18. That according to a probable Opinion if a Tax imposed on Merchandise is not just, it is lawful to use false Weights to gain the more; and if he be charged for so doing he may deny it by Oath, making use of equivocal expressions when he is brought upon Interrogatories before a Judge. A Tenant <sup>Escobar</sup> ad M. J. useful to Merchants, but pernicious to the Farmers p. 93. of Customs.

19. That he who bath a will to commit all the venial sins that are doth not sin mortally: as they do that question the Popes Infallibility. <sup>Granados Diana Muchat.</sup> ad M. J.

20. That a man doth not commit any sin, or is guilty of any irreverence towards God, when he presumes to address himself to him in his devotions having an intent mortally to offend him. <sup>Ad M. J. p. 98.</sup>

21. That a religious man having made use of a Woman may kill her, if she offer to discover what passed between them. You may easily gues what Religion this religious man is of. <sup>Ad M. J. p. 19.</sup>

You may read their pious flights (as they call them) Letter 10. p. 137. to 155. in the business of Confession, Pennance and Absolution.

They affirm Absolution ought not to be denied or delayed, though the Sinner continue in habitual sins against the Laws of God, Nature and the Church, though you discover not the least hope of amendment. *vid. the Bishop of Machlin's Collection and Rejection of 43 horrid Errors.* <sup>M. J. p. 145.</sup> ad M. J. p. 90.

But what is yet mentioned are but little piccadil-  
loes, only inconvenient to neighbourly Society and civil Converse betwixt private persons, and to blast

their Reputation, or deceive them of their Goods and Lives is but a petty Retaile trade.

Therefore I shall hint a few of their Whole-sale Merchants, that trade for Empires, Kingdoms and States, which are the great Arms of the Tree of Supremacy, &c. the other but small Boughs, and some of them twigs comparatively. And that you may believe their deposing and dethroning Kings is from good Authority, read the Reasons given by *Saunders* the Jesuit, published by *Ursinus* p. 190.

If the Pope be infallible (which no *Roman Catholick* dare question) there is great reason he should be supream, and make Laws for the regulating the Consciences of fallible erring Princes and States: the first we read of that assumed this supream Power, as an Article of the *Catholick Faith*, was *Hildebrand*, which Dr. *Paget* observes, and records his infallible princely Canons.

I shall only mention these few.

*That it is lawful for the Bishop of Rome to make new Laws for the necessity of the times*; which all Princes and States are obliged to observe, though they cross their own Laws, and hazard the ruine of their Interest or Lives.

*That the Pope only may use Imperial Robes*; lest temporal Princes should mistake their carnal Emperor for their spiritual Lord and Master.

*That all Princes shall kiss the Popes Feet*: his Hands being seldom clean from Blood, or Lips from Blasphemy.

*That*

*That it is lawful for him to depose Emperors, &c. because they are so much his slaves as to let him.*

*That no general Synod might be called without his Holiness Command: lest they should proceed contrary to his Instructions, which his Council of Trent durst not do.*

*That he ought to be judged by no man: lest they should judge him, as others his predecessors, to be Atheists, Conjurers, Blasphemers, perjured persons, Traytors, Tyrants, Whoremongers, Sodomites, infectious monsters of men.*

*That he is not to be accounted Catholik that a- Vid. Ur- grees not with the Church of Rome; that never sinus pag. yet agreed with her self in any thing, but what<sup>204. 10</sup> tended to the propagating Error and suppressing<sup>240.</sup> the Truth.*

*That Subjects do not sin when they refuse without reason alledged to submit to a Law whereof there hath Ad M.J. p. 92. been a legal Proclamation made by their Prince.*

*That Clergymen are not subject to secular Prin- ces, nor obliged to any obedience to their Laws, even though those Laws are not any way contrary to the pag. 92. State Ecclesiastical.*

Saith Bellarmine, if the Pope should command us to sin we are bound to obey him. Others say, if the Pope should lead thousands to Hell we must not reprove him. vid. Pooles Nullity of the Romish Faith. p. 243.

And admit their Popes to be such as *Baronius, Platina, Genbrandus* and others of their own Au- thors describe them to be, monsters of men, ra- ther

ther Defilers than Rulers of the *Roman Seat*, prodigious slaves to all Vices, and the wickedest of men, none more filthy; that is, admit the Popes be as bad as Vice can make them: yet (saith Bellarmine) Kings are rather slaves than Lords; Churchmen being as far above them as the Soul is above the Body, that Bishops who are at the Popes nod may depose them.

Nay (saith *Masconius*) the Pope is above Law, against Law, and without Law; and therefore can mish Po- do all things: he is Rex Regnum and Dominus fictions of Dominantium: in short, he hath the same Tribu- Rebelli- nal with God himself. *vid. Regula juris Romani* on 1650. quoted by Ursinus p. 193.

Well might one of their great Clergymen say, Pooles when he found a Bible, he knew not who was the Nullity of Author of it; but sure he was some pestilent He- the R. F. retick: for he everywhere condemns the Doctrines p. 218. of our Church.

Ursinus Their Sublimity and Immensity is so great (said Cassenius) no mortal man can comprehend it, no man can express it, no man can think it. *vide Bishop Taylors Dissa. Part 1.*

He can increase the number of the holy Scriptures, dethrone Kings, and dispose of all temporal Domi- nions at his pleasure, punish them with temporal punishments; and this Power is more necessary over Princes than over Subjects: if he could not depose Kings, and compell their Subjects to execute his Power, his Power were not only inefficax, but insufficiens. *Review of the Council of Trent.*

‘ An excommunicate King may with impunity be deposed or killed by any one. *Suarez Def.*  
*Fid. lib. 3. cap. 23.*

‘ Nay *F. Parsons* affirins, that if any Christian p. 149.  
‘ Prince whatsoever decline the *Roman Religion*,  
‘ &c. he presently loseth all Power and Dignity  
‘ before any Sentence of the Pope is pronounced,  
‘ and his Subjects are absolved from all Oaths of  
‘ Allegiance, and ought to reject such a one from  
‘ the Government of Christians by the strictest  
‘ bond of Conscience, and the utmost hazard of *Id. p. 109.*  
‘ their Souls: for he hath *ipso facto* lost his King- 149, 160.  
‘ dom.

‘ The Pope is not only advanced by these Papal  
‘ Janisaries above all the Emperors and Princes, but  
‘ above all that is called God. *vid. Prynnes Roman  
Positions of Rebellion 1650. Dr. Du Moulin's Vind.  
Answe. to Apolog. 1656.*

But to compleat all the rest, lest any Promise  
or Faith engaged to Hereticks, when Policy of  
State requires it, should after obstruct the Suc-  
cesses of the Catholick Cause; as the performance  
with *John Hus* and *Jerom of Prague* would have  
done, had they returned at liberty to propagate  
their Heresie: the prudent Council of *Constance*  
did not only condemn and burn them, but insti- *Vid. Usq. p. 184.*  
tuted it an Article of the Catholick Church, Faith p. 184.  
was not to be kept with Hereticks.

I judge these Texts need no Comment, only  
take some few of the Epithetes given them by  
Popelings themselves.

‘ What

‘ What Idea can be given of those men whose  
 ‘ Maxims dispence with all the obligations of Evan-  
 ‘ gelical purity, who level the Precepts of the Gos-  
 ‘ pel to the corrupt passions of men, who make  
 ‘ our tendency to future Beatitude consistent with  
 ‘ the pleasures and enjoyments of this world, and  
 ‘ who by their artifices of pious sleights, easie De-  
 Preface 30  
 M.J. votions, and such compliances of humane inventi-  
 ‘ tion bring Religion into contempt, &c.

‘ For if a man doth but seriously reflect on their  
 ‘ strange Tenents about Revenge, Calumnies, Re-  
 ‘ stitution, Equivocation, mental Restrictions, shift-  
 ‘ ing and directing the Intention, and that Con-  
 ‘ summation of all extravagance, the Doctrine of  
 ‘ probable Opinions: what can he imagine less  
 ‘ than that such Societies of men are Academies of  
 ‘ Dissimulation and Sycophancy diabolically im-  
 ‘ bargued in a design not only practising but main-  
 ‘ taining and justifying whatever is most horrid and  
 ‘ abominable in the sight of God and man, &c. they  
 ‘ are to be looked on as the bane of Charity and  
 ‘ Sincerity, and the vermine of all humane Socie-  
 M.J. Prof. ty, &c. they joyn Blasphemy and Heresie toge-  
 ‘ ther; Catholicks externally and Hereticks inter-  
 M.J. 30  
 Ad M.J. ‘ nal; Satanically zealous to shew themselves the  
 p. 14. ‘ Patronizers of Homicide, &c.

‘ These pernicious Propositions are the de-  
 42. ‘ structive Vipers of all Morality.

Ad M.J. ‘ Notorious Distracters, Impostors, and Di-  
 p. 48. ‘ sturbers of the publick Peace.

Ad M.J. ‘ A poysnous Morality more corrupt than the  
 p. 51. ‘ the Pagans themselves.

‘ Propo-

‘Propositions doing violence to the natural right, and the Law of Nations, excusing Blasphemies, &c. and the most enormous sins; as if they were light piccadilloes.

‘What dreadful extravagances doth their Doctrine of probable Opinions assert! they open a door to all immorality, they are the general poison of those envenomed sources which communicate a far greater infection than sinful Nature.

‘The most implicit Ignorance is to be preferred before such Knowledge as teaches men to be Scepticks in all things, and to find out ways to justifie the corrupt Maxims of men, and to practise the grossest Sins with safety of Conscience.

This is the Opinion of the Doctors of *Sorbon*, given under their hands in a general Assembly April 1658. *vid Ad M. J. 147.*

Affirming it is not only theirs but the *Curez* of *Rouen* and many other Cities of *France*. *p. 146.*

Also the Bishop of *Maecllin* sends his Protest to the Cardinals of the Inquisition of *Rome*, and annexeth forty three of their pernicious Principles *pag. 843.* not to be tolerated: *vid. Proph. Hildegards p. 51. to 133.*

‘They are (saith he) Hypocrites, subverters of the Truth, proud, shameless, unstable Teachers, delicate Martyrs, covetous Confessors, unmerciful Calumniators, religious for filthy lucre sake, humbly insolent, of an inflexible Piety, insinuating Lyars, peaceable Persecutors, Oppressors of the weak, Introducers and Authors of evil Sects, mis-

*Ad M. J. 55.*

*Ad M. J. p. 64.*

*p. 123.*

'mischievously compassionate, lovers of the world,  
 'Merchants of Indulgences, robbers of Benefices,  
 'importunate Orators, seditious Conspirators (as  
 'we shall see in their Politicks) sighing but out of  
 'Gluttony, ambitious of Honor, criminally zealous,  
 'graspers of the world, applauders of Men,  
 'seducers of Women, sowers of Dissention; no  
 'enemies could ever match these Furies, whose  
 'Colledges and professed Houses are the receptacles  
 'of the guilty, the refuges of dishonesty, the  
 'reproach of Christianity, the Shops of Iniquity,  
 'the Academies of impiety, the lovers of Heresie,  
 'the Chairs of Infection, the high places of Anti-  
 'christ, the Brothel-houses of the Whore of Ba-  
 'bylon, the Architects of Blasphemies against God  
 'and all his Saints, the companions of the Sodo-  
 'mites and Onan, the Emissaries of Devils, &c.  
 'they are a hodge podge of old Errors blended to-  
 'gether after the mode of a new *Olia*, by commu-  
 'nicating with the Netetians, Praxeans, Anthro-  
 'po-Morphites, Collyndians, Gnosticks, Carpra-  
 'catians, Pharisees, Manichees, Nazarites, Catha-  
 'rists, Massilians, Pelagians, Mahumitans, Prisci-  
 'lianists, Ebionites, &c. and what not to over-  
 'turn the fundamental Articles of Christianity.

They who are thus notorious in their Ethicks are no better (but worse if it may be) in their Politicks; he who gave us the precedent Elogy of them in their own words, says also; 'they are the Incendiaries of the whole world, the Ruiners of Cities, the Poyseners of Kingdoms, the Murthers of Kings, the Archtypes of Rebellion, the

Jesuit

Luc. Pref.  
Hist. Jes.  
1627.

pag. 36.

Jesuit reckons it in the number of his Merits, if he may by any sinister ways ruffle and disorder Heretical Kingdoms (so he calls them) encourage weak and unstable minds to slight Magistracy, irritate Divisions, Tumults, Rebellions, absolve from Oaths and sacred Tyes; so that 'tis hard to find any tragical Scene or bloody Theatre into which the Jesuit hath not intruded, and been as busie as *Davus* in the Comedy, contributing in an high measure to every Fanatick insolence, justifying the old lemma *Loyola's* Picture; [*cavete Principes*] these are the Firebrands of *Europe*, the Forge and Bellows of Sedition, infernal Emissaries, the Pests of the age, men that live as if huge Sins would merit Heaven by an Antiperistasis: and indeed what have the Jesuits not done by their Fire-arts both moral and mechanical, to turn all the stately Fabricks of Government into confusion in *France*, *Portugal*, *Germany*; yea and *Turkie* as well as in *Ireland* and this famous Island of *Great Britain*? *vide Modern Policy* cb. 4. sect. 1. 1652.

And much more may you read to this purpose collected from their own Authors by *Ursinus*, *Stillingfleet*, *Chillingworth*, *Bishop Taylor* and the learned Author of the *Fiery Jesuit*, &c. If this be not enough to render them more dangerous in a State (especially in a Protestant State) than Protestant Disenters let the most Popish of Protestants judge.

#### Objection.

Since you charge all these bloody Tenents and rebellious Doctrines against the Principles of Morality

rality and Dictates of Humanity to be the natural Offspring of the Popes Infallibility and Supremacy, from whence do they proceed?

1. Not from Christ.

He disowns them, *Matth. 20.25. Luke 21.25.*

*St. Job. 18.36. My Kingdom is not of this world.*

2. Not from the Apostles.

St. *Paul* condemns Diotriches for loving the Preeminence, St. *John Epist. 3. v. 9.* St. *Peter* (from whom they pretend to derive their Dignity) utterly explodes them; *1st. Epist. ch. 2. v. 13, 14, &c.* so *Romans ch. 13.* the first 8 verses.

3. Not from the Fathers.

*Polycrates* and *Irenaeus* exploded it. *vid. Eusebius lib. 5. c. 21, 22, 23, &c.*

*Cyprian, lib. 1. Epist. 3.*

*Hierom*, all Bishops are of one Worthiness; neither Riches nor Poverty maketh Bishops higher or lower.

*St. Augustine*, about a hundred years after *St. Cyprian*, rejects it. *vid. Council of Africa ch. 9.*

So *Chrysostome Hom. 3. and 35.*

*Gregory the Great* (the last of good Bishops at *Rome*) did not only condemn the Title as Anti-christian; but greatly bewailed it, as the forerunner of the Churches Misery: saith he, *Ages succeeding shall feel the dismal effects of that fond Title*, which he termeth *Nomen vanitatis, vocabulum, prophanum, perversum, superbum, scholeatum, superstiosum.*

4. Not from the Councils.

1. The Council of *Carthage* saith, there is none

none but a few desperate and loose companions take the Authority of the Bishops of *Africa* to be less than that of *Rome* *Cyprian Epist. 3.*

2. The Council of *Nice Canon 6.* *vid. Ruffinus History of the Church lib. i. ch. 6.*
3. Council of *Constantinople ch. 2.*
4. The Council of *Africa Canon 26. ch.*
5. Council of *Ephesus ch. last.*
6. Council of *Chalcedon ch. 28. Canon 16.*
7. Council of *Constantinople ch. 35.*
8. Council of *Carthage ch. 4. Canon 26.*

But it is manifest both the Popes Infallibility and Supremacy proceeded from detestable Treachery and intolerable Pride and Debauchery. *vide* *Secl. 2.*

Not only our Protestant but their own Authors commence the Reign of Antichrist from that time; see *Luthers Opinion pag. 72 of my 2d. Part: viz.* the first that obtained the Supremacy was *Boniface* the third, the most vicious of Popes we read of, who by the help of *Brasutus* cut out his way to the infallible Chair by poysoning six Popes his Predecessors; *viz. Damasus* the second, *Leo* the ninth, *Victor* the second, *Stephen*, *Benedict* the tenth and *Nicholas* the second: *vide Paget 244.* and after wickedly approving of *Phocus* his treacherous and barbarous murdering his Master *Maurice* the Emperor with his Wife and Children, for which he was condemned by *Cyryacus* Patriarch of *Constantinople*; *Phocus* in revenge declares *Boniface* to be Universal Bishop. *vide Plat. in His Life.*

After him *Adrian* the second; by flattering another

## The Interest

ther Tyrant *Basilius*, who murdered his Master *Michael* the Emperor, obtain'd of him that none should enter the Council of *Constantinople*, till they first subscribed to the Popes Supremacy, *circa Anno 870.* from which time they daily gained ground by Force or Fraud over the Bishops of other Churches. But *Urban* the second was not contented with bare Subscriptions, but required them to swear Obedience to him.

And this Supremacy gained from the Clergy by specious pretences of zeal for the Liberties of the holy Church, and to free Clerks from Civil Tribunals and Taxes by Lay-Princes, who were thereby also deprived of their antient privileges of the Investiture of Bishops; and withal prohibited all Appeals but to the infallible Chair: upon this our *Thomas Becket, &c.* contested with *Henry* the second about Arraigning Clerks before criminal Judges, for Murders, Robberies, Felonies, &c. which cost *Becket* his Life, and the King intolerable Troubles and Vexations, and at last the loss of his Kingdom and Life; which Vexations were continued by the insolent Clergy against his three Successors *Richard* the first, *King John* and *Henry* the third, but *Edward* the first, to be quit with them, outlawed all the Clergy. *Matthew Paris Ann. 1213.*

What kind of Creatures the Pope and Clergy were after this, read *Sect 2.* and what woful work they made in the world after they had gained the Supremacy, read *Sect. the 5.*

## S E C T. II.

*Observes the Original of these cursed Principles.*

**A**lthough they had been long a hatching, and dispersed throughout the Popedome, asserted by some, and opposed by others; yet never espoused as Articles of Faith till the Jesuits adopted them.

And if you would know the Divine Original of the Jesuits, you may read St. Johns Prophesie of them *Revel. ch. 9.* where they are described to the life, by Characters that suit with no Sect but themselves.

Where they are distinguished from all other Locusts whatsoever.

1. From their Place, *the bottomless pit.* v. 2. *vide ch. 11. 7. 17.*

2. From the Time, when the Smoak of the Pit had darkened the Air, *in the time of deep Ignorance.*

3. By their Shape, like Horses prepared unto Battel, *terrible, being movers of bloody Wars, &c.* vers. 7.

4. By their Swiftnes in execution, *they had Wings.* v. 9.

5. By their Cruelty, *their torment was as the torment*

torment of a Scorpion when he striketh a man.  
vers. 5.

6. Their Strength to devour, their Teeth were  
as the Teeth of Lyons. v. 8.

7. Their Security, they had Breast-plates of  
Iron. v. 9.

8. Their Grievousnes to the world, men shall  
seek Death, and shall not find it, &c. v. 6.

9. Their Honour, On their Heads shall be  
Crowns of Gold. v. 7.

10. Their Visage, or rather Vizard, their  
Faces were as the Faces of Men, and they had Hair  
as the Hair of a Woman. v. 8.

11. Their Attendants, they had Tayls like unto  
Scorpions, and there were Stings in their Tayls.  
vers. 10.

12. Their King over them, the Angel of the  
bottomless pit. v. 10.

13. The terrible Noise they shall make in the  
world, the sound of their Wings was as the sound  
of Chariots of many Horses running to Battel. v. 9.  
vide Famous Mead his Remains, and the Learned  
Broughton on this Chapter.

Now these Characters are only found in the  
Jesuits, all other Orders of Fryars, &c. are not only  
defective in most of these Qualifications, but in  
the End and Design of their Institution. The  
first Votaries we read of were the Hermits or  
Pilgrims, who were driven into desolate places in  
the height of persecution. Grimstones States and  
Empires, fol. 1197.

And soon after, in Constantines time, when the  
Church

Church had rest, St. *Basil* and St. *Hierome* gathered these dispersed Hermits into Societies and Convents. *Ross View of Religions* p. 249.

After them St. *Augustine*, in the fourth Century, was moved to institute his Order, from his sense of the Corruption and Pollutions with which the generality of Christians were defiled.

In the seventh Century the first Order in the West was instituted by St. *Benedict*, who imitated the *Augustines* in severity of Discipline and strictness of Morals, but much more superstitious; out of which Hive swarmed twenty four distinct Orders, the Daughters still worse than the Mothers, *Ross* 270. *Grimstone* fol. 1203. to 1210.

But the Popes having been struggling first with the Clergy, and next with the Emperors and Princes, for the Supremacy, from *Boniface* 3. in the beginning of the seventh Century, to defend their Title, instituted the *Franciscans* and *Dominicans*, as Fryars Preachers; that they might from the Pulpit chase Princes out of their Thrones: but the stubborn Emperors, &c. defending their Rights with their Swords; as you may read in *Ursinus*, who abbreviates the History.

His Holiness observ'd St. Peters Keys would not do, he threw them into *Tyber*, and drew St. Pauls Sword; for the Light of the Gospel broke out with that strength by *Wickliffs* Books, &c. dispersed in *Germany*, *Bohemiah*, *France*, *Piedmont*, &c. the Popelings observ'd it to be past the Cure of preaching Fryars; whereupon *Paul the third* discern'd it necessary to raise a more warlike Re-

Stillingf.  
p. 306.

giment, and instituted these Knights of the Virgin Mary, as the Jesuits first stiled themselves, Ross.

You have an exact account of their Original and Progress, by that eminent Protestant Divine Dr. Stillingfleet, in his *Fanaticism of the Church of Rome*, pag. 301. to p. 320. and by Grimstone in his *States and Empires*, fol. 1213, to which I shall refer you.

And if you neither laugh at the Ridicule nor weep at the Ignorance and Stupidity of that age, you must be of a steady temper.

But to give you an account of the bloody Wars, barbarous Massacres, and treacherous Assassinations since *Anno Dom. 1545.* the Council of Trent confirmed their Order and their Heterodox Articles of Faith, would be, to copy Volumes of their own and our Authors: but you may read some brief hints in Sect. 5.

### S E C T. III.

Shews the Authority whereby they were confirmed.

Excepting the Popes, whose vowed slaves they are, the Council of Trent is the only Council that approved and confirmed their Institutions: therefore it is worth observing the Qualifications of that Assembly: saith Dr. Stillingfleet,

fleet, pag. 105. so contrived as not to condemn the grossest Error.

The occasion of the Council was to suppress *Luthers* Doctrine in the designe of the Conclave at *Rome*, but press'd by the Emperor, &c. to reform things amiss too, and restrain the Imperiousness of the Pope and his Conclave; the Policy of *Rome* thought it not prudent to deny the calling it, least it should be imposed, nor safe at present to admit it, least it should impose on them; Christendom groaning under their unsupportable Exactions and Tyranny; which *Germany* presented in an hundred Grievances.

Therefore the only expedient was to delay it, and to that end raised many scruples about the Authority of their Summons, the Qualifications of their Members, place of Sitting, &c. by which means they drill'd out twenty years, the Lives of six Popes before the first Session 1542. saith *Grimstone*, then transferred to *Bolonia*, after back to *Trent*.

And after that what time they spent in Preambles, &c. vide *Council of Trent*, p. 139, &c.

1. About the Title, some of the Bishops were for stiling it the most holy Council representing the Church universal, others opposed it, the *Italians* vehemently, *Hist. Council of Trent*. p. 138.

So betwixt the Bishops and the Regulars about Priviledges, between the *Dominicans* and *Fran- ciscans* in several points betwixt the *Italian* Bishops and others about Residence and the extent of Episcopal Power: but the Legates informing the

Pope of these Controversies, he sent them these Orders, Not to broach any new Difficulties in matter of Faith, nor to determine any of the Points controverted among Catholicks, and to proceed slowly in the Reformation, but vigorously against the Hereticks. *vide* Sleidens 12th Book.

But with what vehemency their proceedings were opposed by most Princes, *vide* Field p. 107, &c. by the French King, Sleiden lib. 22, so Charles the fifth, by his Ambassador Mendoza, disclaimed against the Popes Power in calling Synods to reform the Church; besides all the Members of that Council were enjoyned to take this Oath against their Freedom and Liberty, *I will defend the Papacy against all men, so help me God, &c.* Field 23. no man durst offer his Reasons, or object against what the Popes Creatures proposed, but were presently expelled the Council, *Sleiden Com. lib. 21. Craken p. 158.* Yet for all this Cardinal Cantaren, &c. urged for the true Doctrine of Justification, the Spanish and German Bishops strove to reduce the Popes boundless Authority; to oppose whom he encreased the number of Bishops, many of whom only titular: and of a sudden created thirteen new Cardinals, sent his frequent Instructions to direct and lead the Council; that it became a Proverb, *The Holy Ghost travelled from Rome to Trent in a Packet:* Such as they could not expel, as Cardinal Cantaren, &c. they cut off by Poyson: and whilst they were thus abusing the world with an expected Reformation, the Pope raiseth an Army, invadeth Germany,

many, to impose the Tridentine Faith.

This is the Council of Trent, called by the usurped Power of the Pope, guided by Fraud and Subtilty, awed by illegal Expulsions and treacherous Poysonings, ending in bloody Wars; from whence proceeded all their new Articles of Faith.

But with what Dissatisfaction not only to the Emperor and French King, but most other Princes, except the Popes Vassals the *Italians*, these things were received, you may read by their respective Letters printed at the end of the *History of the Council of Trent*, fol. 782. to fol. 823. and then judge whether these Principles were not imposed on their pretended Catholick as well as on Protestant Princes.

But the History of this Council being writ by an Author so generally applauded amongst the Romanists, that it became a proverb, *Father Paul is so blameless and pure, that his very Pantacles were canonized.* vide his *Life*, fol. 43. but being voluminous, I shall refer the Reader to Bishop Bramhall's *Vindic.* p. 351. to 355. where he demonstrates that Council to be neither general, free, nor lawful; and yet this is the best Authority the Jesuits and their Principles are confirmed by; and by which they are grown so presumptuous as to excommunicate all the Christians in the world for damned Hereticks that disown the Pope; though they cannot be ignorant that their Principles and communion are rejected by far the greater number of Christians in the world. y. Page

p. 1. to p. 33. where you may also read their Harmony both in Doctrine and Worship with Protestants of Europe, and how vehemently they explode the Usurpations, Heresies and Idolatries of the Roman Church, fol. 59. to fol. 109. in so much that the Patriarch of Constantinople, &c. excommunicates the Pope and his Clergy once a year. et cetera.

Therefore Rome cannot be the Mother Church nor the Mistress of other Churches, being the fewest in number, and last in being; *Jerusalem*, *Antioch*, *Constantinople*, and *Alexandria*, nay *England* were in the Faith before her, if we may believe the most authentick of Authors, as *Bishop Jewell*, *Dr. Fulk*, *Willet*, *Paget*, vid. fol. 145. *Bishop Bramhall*, *Taylor*, *Stillingfleet*, *Ursinus*, &c. indeed she was first in Apostacy, in that she deserves the Primacy, in departing from the Faith and holy Life of the Apostles and primitive Churches; as is manifest from their own Authors that writ from *Bonifacius* 3. the first debauch'd grand Apostate to *Leo the tenth*, who obtained a Confirmation from the Council of *Trent* of their Errors and Usurpations. Saith *Erasmus* on the thirteenth Chapter of the *Revelations*, *When the Roman Kingdom, after the time of Julianus, was divided into East and West, then began a new Roman Jurisdiction, namely the Popes Pomp, the Kingdom of the Papists took upon it all the Power of the first Beasts, the Roman Emperor, and compelled the Christians to Idolatry and Service of false Gods, under pretence of honouring Christ and Saints.* Again on ch. 17. he doth affirm that

that the Women prophesied of to be the Mother of Whoredoms and Abominations of the earth, drunk with the Blood of Saints, &c. to be Christian Rome. Again, on chap. 18. Sect. 3. *With this Babylon have Princes, and Prelates, and whole Kingdoms committed Whoredoms and Abominations.*

So Hollcot. pag. 18. complaining of the Priests and Prelates, of Rome in his time, saith, *They be like the Priests of Baal, they resemble the Priests of Dagon, they are the Priests of Priapus, and Angels of Hell.*

So Aventine lib. 6. *I am ashamed to say what manner of Bishops we have; with the Revenue of the Church they feed Horses, Hounds, I need not say Whores.*

So Mantuan lib. 3. *Their Wickedness is in every mans mouth, Cities and Countries talk of it; the bruite thereof hath quenched all care of Vertue.*

So their Bishop Cornelius Epist. 3. *With what monsters of Filthiness, with what channel of Uncleanness, with what pestiferous Contagion are both Priests and People defiled, &c.*

So their Palingenus, lib. 5. warns the people, *Let no Fryar, Monk, or any other Priest come within thy doors; take heed of them, they are the dregs of men, the fountain of folly, the sinks of sin, Wolves under Lambs skins, &c. under the shadow of Religion hide a thousand unlawful acts, Committers of Rapes, abusers of Boys, spending night and day either openly with Whores, or secretly with Boys.*

## The Interest

O shameful ! (saith he) can the Church endure such Hogs ?

Saith *Plantina Vita Marcellini*, What shall we think will become of this our age, wherein our Vices are grown to that height, that they have scarce left a place with God for Mercy ? how great is the Leachery of all sorts amongst the Priests and the chief Rulers. vid. His Life of the Popes.

Saith *Mantu. lib. 3.* They are hateful to Heaven, and loathsome with unclean Lusts, &c. they rather kindle and provoke God by their Services, than appease him ; never hope for help so long as such pray for you.

Saith *Hierome*, Whilst I staid at Babylon, and was an inhabitant of that purple Whore, the Senate of Pharisees made an uproar, and the whole Faction conspired against me ; if you would see the barbarous cruelty of one Pope towards another, plucking out of Eyes, famishing in loathsome Prisons, cutting off Tongues, Hands, Fingers, Noses, Stones, &c. vide *Paget fol. 112.*

Saith *St. Augustin on Psalm 44.* They have made us the Citizens of Babylon, we left him that made us, and worship what we make our selves.

Saith *St. Ambrose Apocalips lib. 6.* Rome is become a second Babylon.

Saith *Chrysostom Hom. 36. 1 Cor.* The Church at this day is like unto a Woman that hath quite lost her Modesty.

Saith *Vincent, Religious Orders are become unto mens Souls the way of perdition.*

Saith Card. Beno. *They are led by the Spirit of Error and Doctrine of Devils, Beno de Vita Hildebrand.*

Saith Matth. Paris in Hen. 2. *Whence Christians were wont to fetch the Waters of Righteousness, there they find a poysoned puddle.*

Abbot Joachim on Jeremiah, chap. 1, and 2. proves the Romish Church to be the Whore of Babylon mentioned Rev. 17. *They have chosen Antichrist for Christ, the Devil for God and Hell for Heaven.*

Nay certain of their own Prophetesses, as Saint Bridget lib. 4. cap. 133. and St. Hildegard the Nun in her 2d. Book, &c. declaim vehemently against the Vices as abominable, and their State as antichristian.

So their Bishop Cornelius in his Oration to the Council of Trent, *Would to God they were not fallen with one consent from Faith to Infidelity, from Christ to Antichrist.*

Saith Platina on John 10. *The Popes are clean departed from Peters steps.* vid. Paget fol. 171, &c.

Saith Cataldus in his Prediction of Rome, *Thou unhappy Babylon, the damned pit of Priests.*

It would be endless to give you the Testimony of their own Fathers, Bishops, Fryars, Nuns, &c. of Romes dreadful Apostacy from Christ to Antichrist, and from Truth to Error, from Boniface 3. anno 602. to Leo 10. 1520. the Council of Trent was proposed, and from Leo 10. to Paul 3. the Council was opened, *Hist. Counc. Trent. 97.* all which 20 years time were spent in bloody Wars betwixt

## The Interest

betwixt the Emperor and the Popes, the Emperors and Francis the first of France, &c. vide the *Life and Reign of Charles the fifth*, where you will find, the Pope changed sides theree or four times, as his advantage lay, to weaken them and strengthen himself: though contrary to several Oaths and Leagues agreed on. But did they themselves escape? no: *Rome* was several times taken, and sack'd, the Pope besieged in the *Bastile*, & glad to compound on base conditions, though he kept them not; which Confusions made bloody work all *Italy* over, that by their continued bloody Wars the Pope had so wearied the Emperor and Princes in strugling with him, that *Charles* the fifth resigned the Empire, and retired to a Monastery, and all others let him do what pleased him, and did themselves what he pleased to be quiet: and then the Council of *Trent* past their impious Canons, though not without much contradiction.

Thus you see by whom appoved; next consider by whom rejected and banished.

How far their seditious bloody Principles have been exploded and detested by learned Romanists you may observe *Sect. 1. p. 204. to 208.* which I there inserted to this end, that you may observe, all Papists are not Jesuited Papists: it was evident in the last *Irish* Rebellion, a considerable number of the *Irish* Nobility and Gentry, not only disapproved, but violently opposed the Nuncio's party, who copied out the Jesuits Principles and Practices; as you may read in *Borlacy's History of the Irish Wars*

Wars in 1649, 1650, &c. and in this last Irish Plot I have heard several of good Rank of their party vehemently declare their abhorrency of it: but divers of their Clergy have been Discoverers and Witnesses against their Primate Plunket, &c. which nothing could move them to but Duty, some of them being in a plentiful condition, and titular Dignitaries in their Church, are thereby reduced to great wants, even to extremity, the more is the pity.

And as their Principles have been detested, so their Practices have been resisted, and their persons banished all Popish Realms and States, as fast as they discerned their destructive consequences; as in these following Instances may appear.

1. The State of *Venice* did not only banish but violently thrust them out of the Country, never to return; and made it capital for any man, the Duke himself, to move for their Restoration; you may read the Story at large in *Howels Survey of the Republick of Venice*, fol. 161. to 167. their Charge was for maintaining, that the Rebellion of a Clergyman against the Civil Power was no Treason, because he is no Subject of theirs.

That to be subordinate to the Bishop of *Rome* is of necessity to Salvation, that the Pope can dispence with Subjects from their Allegiance to their Prince, though lawful and natural. fol. 160.

They were all for Treachery and Sedition seised and imprisoned in Irons for one month at *Constantinople*, and were then banished, with their whole

whole Order, out of all the *Grand Seignior's* Dominions, *vide Turks History* fol. 1489. to 1492. the Cause, *vide Sect. 5.*

For the same Tenents were they banished *Bohemiah*, after they had been Instruments of the barbarous Massacre there, and the miserable Desolations of that flourishing Kingdom, *vide Bohemias Persecution*, ch. 42. 53.

*France* did not only banish them by an Arrest or Statute of Parliament dated *Decemb.* 29. 1594. but appointed a Pyramid to be erected for a Memorial of perpetual Excretion of the *Jesuits* and their *Doctrines*; and by another Arrest of Parliament *August 21. 1597.* against admitting them in disguise, or counterfeiting the abjuring of their Order: again *August 18. 1598.* prohibiting Noble-men, &c. from sending their Children to their Schools, or any ways to be educated by them, *L. Luc. Hist.* p. 377. to 385. *Anti-Cotten* p. 48, 52. so the *Austrians*, *Helvetians*, *Valesians* and *Polonians*, &c. banished them.

Saith a *Polonian* Nobleman, *So many Jesuits, so many Plagues in a Country*, *Luc. H.* p. 528. So *Muscovia*, *id. 552.* so the *Swedes*, *id. 333.* so *Lithuania*, *Livonia*, *Mazovia*, *id. 324.* So the *States General* published their *Mandate March 1612.* to banish them out of all the United Provinces, imposing great Mulcts on those that entertained them, or sent their Sons to their Schools, *vide Chron. of Belgia* p. 93, and p. 719.

But I need not trouble you with an account of Protestant Princes and States, where they come not

but in disguise : but if the Popish Princes and States have banished them as Incendiaries, well may the Protestants do it as Traytors ; and above all, *England* and *Ireland*, against whom their Treasons have been incessent above an hundred and twenty years ; as I shew in Sect. 7.

---

## S E C T. IV.

*Of the natural Consequences of these immoral inhumane Principles and Practices.*

1. **T**hey reduce Humanity into a condition worse than brutish, more unsociable more unsafe ; the Beasts of prey have their societies and places of rest, *Isaiab* 34. 14. so *Jeremiah* 50. 39. but amongst these humane Bruits there can be no safe society, no secure habitation : the Protestant Interest of *Ireland* may well lament with the Prophet, *Psal.* 120. 5. *Wo is me that I dwell in Mesech, &c. my Soul bath long dwelt with them that hate peace.*

2. These Principles lay the Ax to the root of the tree of all Morality ; not only the common Law of Nature but of Nations is abrogated, that which distinguisheth betwixt barbarous and civilized Nations is rejected, which is civil Law that maintained Justice, Truth and Mercy amongst a people.

3. These Principles abrogate the Law of God, the Standard of all human Laws, like those Pharisees Christ condemned Mark 7. 9. *Ye reject the Commandments of God, that you may keep your own Tradition, v. 12. making the Word of God void and of none effect by your Traditions, v. 13.* it is not how it is written in the Scriptures, but how it is writ in the Canons or Casuists, &c.

Now those Principles who thus make void all Laws, and indemnifie their Votaries under all transgressions against them, consequently are lawless Principles: of which Daniel prophesies chap. 7. 25. of the man of sin, *He shall speak great words against the most High, and shall wear out the Saints of the most High, and think to change Times and Laws, &c.*

And do we read that ever Mortals since Adam spake such great words against God as this Beast St. John saw rise up out of the Sea having seven Heads and ten Horns, and upon his Heads the names of Blasphemy, *Apoc. ch. 13. v. 1.* to whom there was given a Mouth speaking great things and Blasphemies? *v. 5, &c. vide Ursinus of the Popes Blasphemies pag. 211, 212, and 240.* And that this is the consequence of these Jesuitical Principles, to decline all Laws maintaining Justice, Truth and Mercy is manifest *Sect. 1.* in their Principles, and *Sect. 5.* in their Practices.

Which are aggravated to the height of impiety by their frequent laying their Cockatrice Eggs at others doors, all their treacherous and barbarous Massacres, Assassinations and Rebellions have they

they contrived to father upon innocent persons.

The bloody Massacre of *Paris* on our pious Queen *Elizabeth* and the Calvinists ; for which (saith my Author) all the world laugh'd at them, *Lac. Hist.* 107. For as no History makes mention of so ignoble and barbarous a Tragedy acted on the stage of the world by Princes and Nobles, except the *Irish Massacre* 1641. so never was the contrivance of any affair more notorious than that : we never read that ever Pagan, much less Christian, Prince, that laid so many snares, broke so many solemn oaths and promises as *Charles the ninth of France*, under the conduct of his *Italian Mother*, did in that affair, to turn the joyful solemnity of a Wedding of his own Sisters into so doleful a Tragedy, as barbarously to massacre so many brave Princes, and (as some say) above an hundred thousand of his Subjects in a few days. *vide Thuan. Hist. lib. 52.*

The Gunpowder Treason (if it had hit) had been charged upon the Puritans, under which Character all the serious Protestants of *England, &c.* had been immediately massacred, in revenge of that Tragedy acted by the Avengers themselves : a warning to all Protestants to look before they leap in confederacy with Papists.

Their last bloody Plot, though after full Examination by two Parliaments, declared both by King and Parliament to be evidently a Popish Plot ; yet how many Shams have they been hatching to father it upon Protestants : how industriously have they laboured either to corrupt or ruine the Cre-

dit of the Kings Witnesses, and to awe all persons from appearing against them, by murdering Sir *Edmondbury Godfrey*, and attempting several others who narrowly escap'd them.

By which means the Pope hath the advantage of all Tyrants that ever were in the world: for amongst the rest of his divine attributes, he is omnipresent, to avenge his Quarrels by his spiritual Janisaries in all parts of the world; of whom he may say as the Centurian of his Servants; *I say to this man go, and he goeth, and to that man do this and he doth it*; of which many direful instances might be given out of *Grimstones History of the Netherlands*, and Mr. *Prynnes Pref. Vindic. of fund. Liberties, &c.* as *William and Maurice of Nassau in Belgia 1584*. *Henr. the third and fourth of France by Stabs*; the Queen of *Navarr* by a pair of poysoned Gloves; *Gregory the seventh poysoned eight Cardinals, vide Ursinus pag. 221*. *Paul the third poysoned his Mother, Sister and Neece, vid. Ursin. p. 220*. so *Stephen the Prince of Transilvania by poyson, Luc. Hist. pag. 614*. *Innocent the fourth attempted to poyson the Emperor Conrade, Ursin. p. 221*. King *John poysoned by a Monk of Swinsted*: nay, when other projects have failed, rather than miss effecting their malice, their very Temples, which are Sanctuaries against others, have been used as Slaughter-houses of these Ecclesiastical Butchers, two Princes of the House of *Medicees* assaulted at Mass, the one kill'd, the other wounded, by the Order of *Sixtus the fourth, circa ann. 1480*.

When

When *Henr.* the fourth besieged *Hildebrand* in the Bastile his Holiness suborned Traitors to convey great Stones on the Rafters, of the Church over that place where the Emperor sat, to let them fall on his head whilst at his Devotions, but were discovered by the fall of one of them before the time, *Ursin.* p. 32.

But most horrid was their poysoning the Emperor *Henry* the seventh at *Bonavent*, although one of their own Disciples, in their Chalice at the Sacrament, *vide Grimstones State of the Empire* fol. 603. its like from thence the Mass became a Sacrifice: so that the consequences of these inhumane Principles depending on the Popes Infallibility for Sanctio[n] must be desperately dangerous to humane Society, considering what kind of bruites the Popes themselves have been as they are described by *Platina, &c.* on their Lives; but *Ursinus* hath epitomised their Catholique Vertues, pag. 198. to 243. and reduc'd them into their respective Classes, 24 in number, to be deliberately read in less than one hour, how many of them were Atheists, Arrians, Conjurers, Blasphemers, Tyrants, Traytors, Parricides, Adulterers, Sodomites, incestuous persons, Drunkards, monsters of men, &c. And how like Priest like People they are at *Rome*, hear some of their own Poets Characters.

## Of their Secular Priests.

*Hateful to God, polluted with vile Lusts,  
Alas, in vain they manage sacred Trusts !*

**Mantuan Heaven** they provoke, not please : for such to pray  
There is no need : nor help at all can they.  
Put in new Ministers, and cast them out  
From Temples this so sacrilegious Rout.  
Nor let a longer stay profess  
They make a trade of Wickedness.

## Then of their Regulars.

*And those men too, who seize that lofty Name,  
[Religious persons] bragging that they came  
From holy Fathers, under fleece of Sheep,  
Vile wretches, Souls of Wolves within them keep ;  
Thus Vertues visage is abus'd  
To cloak the Baseness by them us'd.*

**Pasquil.** Flee Rome, that wouldest be holy ; come not neer :  
Thou mayst be any thing but godly there.  
I've seen thee, Rome ; adieu : ne'r more will see,  
Till Bawd, or Whore, or worse I mean to be.

SECT.

S E C T. <sup>30.</sup> V.

*Shews what hath been the Practice of this Principle of Supremacy since usurped by the infallible Prince of Priests.*

**T**O begin with the Apostle of this Profession *Hildebrand*, I gave you a taste of his infallible Canons : but observe his suitable Practice.

1. Against his liege Lord the Emperor *Hen.* the fourth, a warlike brave Prince, that had fought 60 Battels with success ; and yet this bold insolent Prelate excommunicates him, deprives him of all Regal Authority, absolves his Subjects from their Oaths of Allegiance, &c. on which some of the discontented Princes (especially the Duke of *Saxony*) rebel ; whereby he was compelled (to prevent the shedding of Christian Blood) to humble himself to this man of Pride so low, as to wait, with his Empress and Son, clad in Canvass, barefooted three days in cold frosty weather at his Holiness's Gates, before he obtain'd Absolution : yet soon after, without any new provocation (we read of) but the Jealousie of this infallible Tyrant, that the Emperors great Stomack would not digest this intolerable Indignity, renewes his Excommunication, and instigates *Rodulph* Duke of *Swavia* his Brother in Law to invade him, who after many bloody

Bickerings was routed and slain. After that stir'd up the *Saxons* to create *Harman Prince of Luxemburgh* Emperor: after he was slain seduceth *Egbert Marquess of Saxony* to take upon him the Empire: after he was slain the Emperor called a Council at *Brixit*, which deposed and banished this insolent bloody Pope, for *Heresies, Sacrilege, Factions, a Defender of Perjury, Scandal, a Believer of Dreams and Divinations, a notorious Necromancer possessed with an unclean Spirit, an Apostate from the true Faith.* Thus far infallible *Hildebrand*, who dyed in exile. *Page* fol. 250, &c.

But this *Elijah* bequeathed his Mantle to his Successor *Pascall* the second, who revives *Hildebrands Curse* against the old Emperor, and prevaleth with his own Son *Henry* to rebel against his most puissant Father, and to usurp the Imperial Crown: but some *Achitophel* told this young *Ab-salom*, old *David* had been a man of war from his youth: and therefore his infallible spiritual Father advised him to decline Force, and try Treachery, in *English*, though a Treaty in *Italian*, against his carnal Father: so a Diet was summoned at *Menitz*, where the old Emperor, depending upon the publick Faith for safety, was treacherously seized and cast into Prison, where he soon ended his miserable days. Which unnatural Rebellion against so famous a Father was highly magnified by *Cardinal Baronius*: saith my Author, *What Turk or Savage would be the Oeconomist of such unnatural Treachery?* But after this deposing of Kings became common; as *Boeslaus King of Poland* by *Childerik*,

Childerick the third, the Emperor *Frederick Barbarossa* by *Zechary* the first; *Innocent* the third excommunicated the Emperor *Philip*, and then deposed him, and set up *Otho* the fourth, and plunged them in bloody Wars, then excommunicated *Otho*, and absolved his Subjects from their Oaths of Allegiance, *circa ann. 1200*. Again, *Frederick* the second first excommunicated, then absolved him, upon his promise to assist in the holy War; where, while he was in person bravely fighting, and had taken *Jerusalem*, *Nazareth*, and *Joppa*, &c. from the Saracens, the Pope raiseth an Army, invades his Territories, enters *Naples*, wrested divers places from him, giving out he was dead; but Letters coming of his great success in *Asia*, so much vexed his Holiness, he trod them under his Feet, and deludes his Son *Henry* to conspire against him, which caused the shedding much Christian Blood: but at his return he subdued his Enemies, committed his Son to prison in *Apulia*, where he shortly after dyed, *circa anno 1220, 1244*.

*Clement* the sixth (to keep up the Trade) excommunicated *Ludovicus* of *Bavaria*, and commanded the German Princes to elect *Charles* the fourth. 1346.

*Julius* the second excommunicated *Lewis* the twelfth, and deposed *John* King of *Navarr*, and gave his Crown to the King of *Spain*, 1536.

*Gregory* the tenth excommunicated our *Henry* the eighth, *Pius* the fifth Queen *Elizabeth*. If you read the Histories of those times, especially *Ursi-*

printed *anno Dom. 1600.* who hath epitomised them into a small Volume (to be read in a few hours,) from *Charles the Great, anno Dom. 800.* to *Rodolph the second, 1612.* a period of 812 years; who, though briefly, yet fully relates the treacherous and bloody tyrannical Practices of the Popes towards the Emperors, Princes and States of Christendom from time to time; and then consider the bloody Wars, Desolations of Countries, &c. these Acts produc'd; you will confess, his Holiness hath been no slothful Servant in improving this talent of Supremacy, &c. to the utmost, and thereby deserv'd his Dignity and Power to tread upon the necks of Princes, as of the Emperor *Frederick Barbarossa* on his submission at *Venice*, and be attended on (as before) by the Emperor *Henry the fourth* three Winter nights and days barefoot; and to whip *Henry the second* till the Blood ran down, by the Monks of *Canterbury*, after he had walk'd barefoot so far upon the stones, as his Feet wept tears of Blood upon the pavement; though he had openly purged himself of the Crime of *Becket's* Death before; and to have his Stirrup held, and his Horse led by the most potent Emperors and Kings present in *Rome* whenever he mounted, and whensoever he washes his Hands to have Emperors or Kings to serve him with water, and to attend at Table till the first Course be served, and to prostrate themselves at his Feet whensoever they approached his sacred Presence. *vide Ceremonia Ecclesie Romanae.*

But that so many high born Heroick Princes shoul

should so basely crouch to the usurped Power of such insolent, imperious Peasants, as many of those Popes have been, is prodigious and only to be ascribed to that divine Judgment threatened on them, *that the ten Horns Shall have one mind; and shall give their Power and Strength unto the Beast,* Revel. 17. 13. but our comfort is, *the same ten Horns shall hate the Whore, and make her desolate and naked, and shall eat her Flesh, and burn her with fire; because God hath put in their hearts to fulfil his will, and to agree and give their Kingdoms to the Beast until the Word of God shall be fulfilled.* v. 17.

But this may be observed, as soon as they became Slaves to the Pope, they became Tyrants over their own Subjects; the Emperor *Charles* the fifth, though otherwise a brave Prince, and *Philip* his Son King of *Spain*, who murder'd his own Son, *vide Ursinus* p. 190. *Francis* the first, the Duke of *Savoy*, and most of the *Italian* Princes, who by their barbarous Inquisitions, Persecutions and bloody Wars have made all Christendom swim in Blood since they were Vassals to his Holiness.

But these things were but the beginning of Christendoms sorrows, for the Pope to insult sometimes over one Prince, and other times over another, and not bring all their prophane necks under his holy Feet at once, were inferior to his infallible Grandeur, his Holiness by this time was become his Mightiness, and resolv'd to let the whole Christian world know his terribleness to his rebellious

rebellious Subjects the Kings of the Earth, and dischargeth his thundering Canons, and sends out his roaring Bulls against all Princes and States that would permit a person to live in their Dominions that should open his mouth against or peep into his Mystery of Iniquity.

But the most unchristian and treacherous design the Jesuits were employed in by his Holines was anno 1627, &c. to incense the Grand Seignior against the Patriarch of *Constantinople*, accusing him for publishing Books against the Alcaron, which is a capital crime there, that might have tended to the ruine of all the Eastern Christians under the *Turks* Power; but God threw them into the pit they had digged: also they charg'd him to counterfeit the Grand Seigniors Seal, and to stamp false Mony, and hold a correspondency with the Cossacks, in order to joyn with them in their intended Rebellion, &c.

You may read the Story at large in *Turks Hist.* pag. 1489. to 1492. where is recorded Cardinal *Bendins* Instructions to *Rossi* the Jesuit; in the fourth Article the Patriarchs Errors are declared as followeth.

We are advised that he denies the Vocation of Saints, the Worship and Veneration of Images, the Reliques of the Saints, the real Presence of Christ in the Eucharist, and Traditions, and sends Youths to the *German* and *English* Academies to be educated.

If these Errors are not sufficient to move the *Roman* Conclave to incense the *Turks* to destroy

millions

millions

millions of innocent Christians that maintain them.

Let all good Catholicks judge the Ignatian tribe thought to have merited Heaven by this holy project, as the Master-piece of their good Works; but it proved a Halter, &c. as bad as the Turk is, he exploded the Treachery and Cruelty of the Pope.

But considering how *Nicholas the fifth*, their Predecessor, had not only permitted but assisted *Mahomet the Great* to run down the pious *Greek* Emperor *Constantius the eighth*, because he disowned his Supremacy, whereby *Constantinople* was taken and sack'd, and all the Eastern Churches since miserably enslaved. *vide Turks Hist. fol 340.* This project against their miserable Lives was but to perfect their first against their pleasant Liberties. Turkish Slavery being too moderate a punishment for the Heresie of Antisupremacy, &c.

The only way to prosper against the Turks is to destroy the Christians; as a Jesuit told the Emperor *Charles the fifth* in an Oration at *Auspurg*, *Till you make your Horse to swim in the Blood of the Lutherans, never expect any good Fortune against the Turks. Luc. Hist. p. 186.*

Saith Father Steward, *We must burn and cut the throats of these Hereticks, if ever we prosper.*

But *Rodulph the Emperor*, who (by their clandestine machinations, saith my Author) they prevailed with to sign an Edict to silence the Protestant Ministers, was convinced of this Error, when news soon after was brought to him, the Turks had taken *Alba-regalis*, *As a man astonished, said he,*

I did expect some Judgment would befall me, afte I began to usurp Gods Government over mens Consciences. *vide Bohemian Persecution, ch. 40.*

Shutting the mouths of Gods Ministers hath usually opened the mouths of Gods Judgments: they that will not hear the voice of Gods Word, shall feel the smart of his Rod sooner or later. *vide Hist. of Boh. Persecution, ch. 48, 49, 50. Luc. Hist. p. 324.* never yet did Prince dance after the Jesuits pipe, but the Comedy ended in a Tragedy; as the Emperor *Charles the fifth*, after him his Son *Philip, &c.*

So *Francis the first, Henry the third and Henry 4th of France, &c. vid. Serris Hist. of their Reigns.*

But, as if the circuit of the old world had been too narrow a stage for them to act their Tragidies on, no sooner doth *Spain* discover and invade *America*, but thither go the Jesuits, by whose instigation and assistance have been destroyed twenty millions of poor innocent people. *vid. Romes Triumphs, p. 126. and Luc. Hist. p. 256. Dr. Whites Way to the true Church, p. 49. Gages New Survey of the West Indies, &c.*

And that the rising as well as setting Sun might blush to behold their world-confounding projects, they have been as busie in the *East Indies*; but, saith my Author, in the Kingdom of *Japonia* the *Catastrophe of these Firebrands and their Prosylites were miserably extinguished, their Hypocrisie and Covetousness having rendered them monstrously odious to the Japonians, &c. vid. Bernb. Var. Relig. in Reg. Japon. ch. 11.*

That

That as their predecessors the old Pharisees compassed Sea and Land to make Proselytes, &c. these modern Pharisees have trod miles to their steps to convert alias to destroy Nations and Countries; and of all the Countries in the world, esteemed by them heretical, *England* with its Territories is the mark they have for this hundred years past and at this day do most level their poysoned Arrows against: therefore, of all the Protestants in the world, the *English* or (at least) the *Irish* Protestant is not to be blamed for manifesting a dread of the influence of Jesuited Papists; the burnt Child dreads the fire.

And it being the Jesuits declared Opinion, the Catholick Religion is not to be recovered in *England*, &c. by Disputing or Writing, but with an Army, and with Fire and Sword. *vid. Prynnes Compl. Hist.* Part 1. pag. 449, 450. *Idem in Preface to Vind. of Fund.* Part 1.

I am of the same Opinion in that point; but were I of their Principle, and design'd to make one trial more of this supposed infallible expedient, I would advise the next Consult to be sure the Army be strong enough, and the Fire big enough; for if they miss the next attempt, it is twenty to one but the exasperated *English* Hereticks will reckon with them for old scores, and endeavour more effectually to secure themselves against new Massacres. *vide Part 2. ch. 2. p. 83. top. 89. and Supplement Sect. 7.*

SECT.

## S E C T. VI.

*Of their Inconsistency with the just Power  
and Right of Temporal Princes and  
States.*

1. **T**He most absolute Sovereign Monarchs in the Christian world, much more inferiour Princes, &c. have been greater slaves since the Popes usurped Supremacy, than ever (we read) any conquered or tributary Prince, &c. have been to the Great Turk, &c.

*Vide Ursinus's Compendium of the Lives of the Emperors*, and then consider whether the Turks ever dealt with their Vassals after Submission, as their Holinesses have done with their lawful Sovereigns, who the Laws of God and Man enjoys Subjection too: Did he ever insultingly tread on their Necks upon Submission, as *Alexander* the third on *Frederick* the first? or kick their Crowns off their Heads with his Feet, as *Celestin* the third did to the Emperor *Henry* the sixth? or suffer them to stand with their tender Ladies and Children in a manner naked, bare-foot and bare-leg'd, waiting to acknowledg their Vassalage in Frost and Snew; or did he ever cause them to be whip'd like Vagabonds, as he did our *Henry* the second till the Blood ran down, for restraining the Insolency of their own Subjects? No. Multitudes

of instances might be given of this kind wherein the Antichristian Pope hath outdone the Anti-christian Turk in barbarous insultings over Princes, &c.

And this tyrannical slavery exercised against all legal pretence to Royal Dignities.

1. No hereditary Title, though derived from the most Royal and antient Descents, could secure their Claim until confirmed by the Pope.

1. The Line of *Constantine the Great* after three hundred years Regency rejected by the Pope, and *Phocas*, of base birth and vile conditions, set up for granting *Rome* the Supremacy. *Grimstones State of the Empire* 594.

2. In the year 800. the Line of the *Grecian* Emperors rejected, and *Charlemaine* set up by *Leo the third*, *Grimstone* fol. 596. from which time you may read in *Ursinus* the abstract of the frequent Treacheries of the successive Popes, sometimes instigating Sons to rebel against their Fathers, &c. labouring to extinguish all lineal Descent, and after suppressing due Elections to usurp the sole power of creating and deposing Emperors, &c. at their will and pleasure, to whom I shall refer you.

2. No legal Election nor general free choice of inferiour Princes and States, though of never so long prescription, could fix a Crown on their Heads till set on by the Pope: as in the case of *Frederick Barbarossa*, *Ursin.* p. 47. his predecessor *Conrade the third*, p. 43. so *Lodowick of Bavaria*, p. 112. the like that brave Prince *Charles the*

fifth, and his Successor *Ferdinand, &c.* vid. *Urs.* 141. to 177. *Fred.* the second, p. 102.

3. No Concession or submission to the Popes Sentences could obtain Absolution longer than his Holiness could pick the least hole in their Coats; instance the Emperor *Henry the fourth*; so the Emperor of *Greece, Constantine the seventh* being in distress consented to the worshipping of Images, &c. yet soon after the Pope sets up *Charles the Great* as Emperor of the West, after him the Emperor *John Paleologus*, to make the Pope his Friend when distress'd by the Turk, owns the Popes Supremacy in the Council of *Florence*, 1439. yet he assisted his Enemies and obstructed his Aids, to the utter ruine of the *Greek Empire* and Eastern Churches: *Henry the fourth of France* turns Papist to please the Pope, and extends all possible respect to the Jesuits to preserve his Life from Assassination, revoked all Edicts made for their Banishment by his Predecessor, pull'd down the Pillar erected in memory of their barbarous Assassination of *Henry the third*, and other treacherous Villanies; yet after all was stab'd in the Heart by *Raviliac*, because he tolerated two Religions: in which Christ's words were verified, *He that will save his life shall lose it; but he that will lose his life for my sake shall find it.*

4. No strength of Arms nor strong holds could ever secure them from the Popes vengeance, when once he resolv'd to rid the world of them; as is evident in *Henry the third of France*, stab'd by a Fryar in the midst of his mighty Army, besieging

Sieging Paris, though a great Persecutor of the Hugonites; and this after the good Emperor Randolph the second told him *there was no greater sin than to force mens Consciences*, supposing thereby to win Heaven, did oftentimes lose what they possess'd on Earth. French. Hist. p. 318. which when dying he declared to his Nobles, that *Piety is a duty of man to God, over which worldly force hath no power*, pag. 319. so that most warlike Prince Henry the fourth after all his Conquest and his changing his Religion to preserve his Life was stab'd in the midst of his warlike Captains, by that wicked Regicide Raviliac: read Grimstone's *State of the Empire*, &c. you may find many other instances.

5. No Articles for Peace or publick League will secure them: they have always snap'd like Sampsons new Cords and green Withs; for as there is no Faith to be kept with Hereticks; so not with Catholiks, if they stood in the way of the Popes Interest, nay Honour; as multitudes of presidents might be given, even to fill a large History: I can but give hints.

1. John the thirteenth perfidiously broke his Oath solemnly given on the Body of St. Peter to Otho the Great; saith my Author, *the Emperor was scarce out of Rome Gates before his Holiness perjur'd himself*, Ursin. 13.

2. The like after Clement the second and the Romans solemnly took Oath never to presume to meddle with the Election of a Roman Bishop without express Commission first obtained from the

Emperor; this honest Pope was presently poysoned, and *Gregory the seventh* that mischievous monster (saith my Author) after he had poysoned six Popes, decreed upon pain of Excommunication, all that should deny he had not only power in Heaven to bind and loose, but Jurisdiction on Earth to take away and give Empires, Kingdoms, &c. to whom he pleased, Urs. p 24. which he exercised in the most insolent and vile manner over the Emperor Henry the fourth, Ursin. p. 28.

Now if this be the case of Christian Princes, that no hereditary Title, no legal Election, no publick Leagues or Covenants, no humble Submission nor strength of Arms can secure them from Depositing, nor their loyal Subjects from Massacres and Aslassinations, what miserable Servitude are they reduced unto!

They dare not practice the dictates of their own Reason in prosecuting the Interest of their States, they dare not correct or punish their rebellious Subjects for the highest Insolences and Contumacy, as in the case of *Anselm* and *Thomas Becket*; they dare not indulge their most loyal Subjects in their dissent from the Papacy in the smallest point that toucheth their Supremacy, nor protect them from the highest Exactions the Pope and his Clergy shall think fit to impose on them, as in the case of *Henry the fourth of France* and our King *John*, they are in the worst condition of Vice-Roys, having no Standard or fixed Rule to govern by, but the arbitrary contingent Will and

and Pleasure of the Pope, which is as variable as the Weather, *vide Platina*.

Now is it to be imagined, that any Sovereign free Prince in the world, not infatuated, will chuse to dwell in this house of bondage, except they who like Error better than Truth, human Tradition better than divine Institution, and scandalous Sins better than holy Life?

If any shall alledge, the Protestants are full of Divisions and Confusions, it is manifest *Part 2. Chap. 2.* that the Papists have far more Divisions and different Opinions amongst them in matters more momentous, their Harmony is only in their Errors, Superstitions and Immoralities, *vide Dr. Hornebeck p. 172. King James's Monetary Epistle.* And would any man in his wits turn Papist for the sake of so cursed an Union? *vide Platina on the Life of Stephen the sixth, and Bishop Hall his Book call'd the Peace of Rome.* They were esteemed Rebels against God, Sons of Belial, that did but talk of chusing a Captain to return to Egypt to the house of Bondage; it was for that Sin all their Carcasses fell in the Wilderness, *Numbers chap. 14.*

The *Israelites* had a Law, that the Servant who so undervalued his Liberty in the year of Jubilee as to chuse bondage, his Ear should be bored at the Door-posts, and to continue a slave for ever: but Popish slavery is worse than Israelitish bondage; theirs was only corporeal, but this is not only corporeal, but spiritual; we must believe against all dictates of common Reason, nay against

our Senses their corporeal presence, legions of lying Miracles, their Infallibility, &c. or be damned and burnt for Hereticks: Subjects must either be Rebels at home, or Hereticks at Rome, if his Holiness see cause to quarrel with their lawful Princes.

Nay we must believe all their Blasphemy against God is Piety, and all their Treason against Kings and Princes to be Loyalty, or be perverse Hereticks.

i. Their Blasphemy against God when they play the Devils for Gods sake by pretending Gods Commission, and designing his Glory by all their inhuman barbarous Acts, although they thereby violate all solemn Oaths and Leagues, &c. it is alledged to be for Gods Glory; as in the bloody *Parisian Massacre*, &c. never did Prince make and break so many solemn Oaths, Imprecations and Royal Grants, to trepan his Subjects into the pit of destruction, as *Charles the ninth of France* for Gods Glory.

That most barbarous of Murderers the Duke of *Guise*, after by his Order, the brave Admirals dead Body was thrown out of the Window into the street, he kick'd and trampled on it crying out to his Fellow Blood-hounds *this is he, a blessed beginning let us now go on in the name of God*; in which name they, before morning (saith my Author) sack'd and plundered 4000 Houses, barbarously murderded above five hundred Lords and persons of Quality, and ten thousand of inferior rank; no Age, Sex, nor Quality, not the innocent

cent sucking Infant nor decrepacy of old age found mercy until above 100000 innocent Souls were destroyed in *France*, and this perpetrated in the name of God, and for his Glory ; and so agreed unto by the Council of *Trent*, with *Spain* and *France*, &c. in the Confederacy, to extirpate all the Protestants in the world within their power, stil'd the *Holy League* ; in pursuance of which, not only *France*, but *Piedmont*, *Bohemiah* and *Belgia*, &c. tasted of the same bitter cup : yet when the news of this inhumane barbarous Massacre came to *Rome*, his Holiness and their Eminencies in their Pontificalibus march'd in procession to their great Church, and caused *Te Deum* to be sung, and all expressions of Popish Devotions to be express'd, as a *Thanksgiving* to the most merciful God for this most unmerciful barbarous work, and a *Jubilee* proclaimed in honour of it.

Its only perfect Copy (we read of) ever acted on the stage of the world was the *Irish Massacre*, and that was done in the name of God, and for his Glory : *vide the Popes Letters to O'Neal October 18. 1642. and to the Clergy and Nobles of Ireland*, dated at *Rome* Febr. 1. 1642. and in the Popes Bull dated *May 25. 1643.* signed *M. A. Miraldus.*

In which, after observing the holy Zeal of their pious Ancestors to root out Heresie, and propagate the Catholick Faith, proceeds to his Benediction, *In the name of the merciful God and the blessed Apostles St. Peter and St. Paul is granted a*

full and plenary Indulgence and absolute remission of all their Sins, Trespasses, Transgressions, Crimes and Delinquencies, how heinous and atrocious soever.

I instance in these two Presidents, as being in our sight and memories; but if you please to read the Popes Bulls and Excommunications, &c. against any Prince or State, they are all in the name and for the Glory of God. And if their Piety and Virtue consist in these barbarous inhumane Treasons and Massacres, what shall we think of their Vice and Wickedness?

2. As their Blasphemy against God must be believed for Piety, so their most horrid Treasons against Princes, &c. must be esteemed Loyalty; in which multitudes of instances might be given out of the Histories of other Countries. But we need not go far from home to find them: for all their Rebellions against the King, and most barbarous inhumane Cruelties exercised upon his most loyal Subjects in Ireland did they transact in the Kings Name, to which they counterfeited his Great Seal, *vide Borlacy* fol. 29. and declared all they did was for the Kings Service. See their Remonstrance at Trim March 17. 1642. with their other Addresses, but especially the grand Bond of their Catholick Confederacy, their Oath of Association, they declare thus in the Preamble, *As also for the defence and safeguard of his Majesties Person, regal Power, just Prerogatives, Honour, State and Rights*: in the body of the Oath thus; *I A. B. do profess, swear and protest before God,*

his

his Saints and Angels, that I will, during my life, bear true Faith and Allegiance to my Sovereign Lord Charles, &c. that I will, to my power during my life, defend, uphold and maintain all his just Prerogatives, Estates and Rights, &c.

Now to say this in that very act in which the Bond of their treasonable Rebellion consisted, which after the greatest deliberation they agreed to publish, in contempt of the Kings Laws and Sovereign Power, puts dull Hereticks to a stand what to make of Popish Loyalty; unless they can loyally rise in Rebellion against their King, and barbarously murder two or three hundred thousand of his loyal Subjects for his Honour and Service.

Sir John Temple p. 6.

The Lords of the Pale desired Commissions and Arms to resist the Rebels, and then employed them to assist them, for his Service. Sir John Temple p. 50. To certain Sherriffs and others of his. They maintained a long and bloody War against, His Majesties Vice-Roy and Army commissioned by him, for His Majesties Service.

After near two years, viz. June 1643, they, by the utmost extremity of War against the Kings Vice-Roy, had reduced his Majesties Army into great extremities of wants, &c. yet in their Instrument, empowering their Commissioners to treat about the Cessation, they stile themselves His Majesties most faithful Subjects necessitated to take up Arms for the Defence of His Majesties just Prerogatives and Rights. vide Dr. Borlase pag. 126.

And

And this near two years after His Majesty had declared them and their Adherents and Abettors ~~bad~~ and wicked persons, that had rob'd and massacred multitudes of his loyal Protestant Subjects, Rebels and Traitors against his Royal Person, Enemies to his Crown, &c commanding his Justices and Army to prosecute the said Rebels and Traitors with Fire and Sword, as persons unworthy of Mercy or Favour. *vid. Dr. Borlace's Hist.* fol. 53, 54.

It is evident His Majesty esteemed that Treason and Rebellion they called Loyalty and good Service: yet so confident they were all they had done confiscted with their Loyalty, they menaced the Lords Justices and Council, July 1643. if any Messenger brought any Papers to them containing other Language than to His Majesties loyal and obedient Subjects, they should not return safe. *Dr. Borlace p. 128.*

And to pass by all the Breaches of their Articles of Cessation, which you may read a Brief of in *Dr. Borlace's Hist.* fol. 147, 148.

Take but a brief view of their Behaviour after the Peace was proclaimed 1646, and 1648.

1. They treacherously contrived to cut off the Lord Lieutenant and his Army, who in confidence of the Articles of Peace they had got into their Quarters as far as Cashel. *Borl. p. 161*

Their Excommunicating all that adhered to the Peace, and joyning with the Nuncio's Army to besiege and distress the Lord Lieutenant, with the Kings Army in Dublin. *Borl. p. 162, 165.*

Their treacherous Consult at Waterford to cut off

of the Lord Lieutenant and his Party, who visited them in kindness to contrive their Security, and was instrumental (to the great hazard of his Person) to preserve a Body of Foot, that had otherwise been cut off in their Retreat from passage; were these things for His Majesties Service? *Borlase's Hist.* fol. 231, 232.

Nay from that time all their Affronts, Indignities and Contempts put upon the Kings Authority, in the Persons of the Marquesses of Ormond and Clanricard, were still for the Kings Service, you may read in *Borlase's History of the Years 1650, 1651.*

When not only the Lord Lieutenant was gayly affronted, to that height as is not to be paralleld for Rudeness and Ingratitude, and after all his patience, bearing with and winking at so many repeated affronts (which his high Spirit would have disdained the least part of, if the Kings Interest had not weighed down all) they excommunicated and rejected his Person and Authority with all imaginary reproach and slander. *Vide Borlase* 259. to 273. but it was still for the Kings Service.

And little better Treatment did that most loyal and upright Catholick Peer, the Marques of Clanricard, meet with from his Countrymen. *Vide idem* id. 291. to 295.

But after all, for that unpardonable sin of Loyalty, &c. was excommunicated, as a Contemner of the Authority of the Church, because he would not betray his Trust from his Prince. *Vide idem* fol. 287.

But

In ~~Recall~~ these intolerable Affronts and Contempts put on the Kings Authority from the Peace 1648, was only by the Clergy and Nunio's Party: for not only the Marquess of Clanricard but many other Catholick Noblemen and Gentlemen, with a considerable party of the Popish Army adhered stedfastly to the Kings Authority to the last; the other only pretended to it.

Which fully evidenceth all Papists (as is before asserted) are not Jesuit Papists. And it would be better both for themselves and us, if they would more visibly distinguish themselves, that we might know our Fiends from our Enemies.

My Opinion is, those Subjects indulged by their Prince in the Liberty of their Consciences ought not only to explode all pernicious Principles to the Peace of his State in themselves, but detect them where they discover them in others of their Sect or Persuasion; or otherwise they justly suffer those Miseries that shall ensue by their neglect: for though Unity in Religion is an excellent bond for Christian neighbourly Society, where it can be obtained without violence to Reason and Conscience.

Yet I judge an Unity in Loyalty, that is, mutually to adhere to the Civil Constitutions of the Government they live under is much more steady and safe: Civil Interest being much more inclusive and less disputable than Religious: for since St. Paul withstood St. Peter to the Face, *Galat. 2. 11.* and that Sharp Contention betwixt Saint Paul and Barnabas, on which they separated *Acts 15. 39.*

I do

I do  
but  
the  
fam  
Erro  
acted  
tichri  
Christ  
The  
world  
fortab  
or H  
nity,  
gelica  
persec  
Lord  
sed S  
kille  
cies a  
ver p  
Perse  
of Bla  
and (c  
civil I  
under  
punish  
Fo  
Gran  
Subm  
of R

I do not find either in sacred or other History, but there hath been Contentions and Divisions in the Church: but still their Civil Interest was the same against Pagan Persecutors, until that wicked Error of the *Arrians* became potent, and persecuted the Orthodox, since which time that Antichristian Spirit of Persecution hath rendered Christians less sociable than Pagans.

That were I to choose my Habitation in the world, I should think my self more safe and comfortable in the Neighbourhood of moral Turks, or Heathens, that retain the Principles of Humanity, than amongst such Christians as the Evangelical Prophet foretold, *that shall hate me and persecute me for Gods Name sake*, saying, *let the Lord be glorified, Isaiah 66. 5.* and also our blessed Saviour saith, *the time cometh that whosoever killeth you will think they do God good Service*; which must intend the true God: which Prophecies are fulfilled by Papal Rome; Pagan Rome never pretended Gods Service: which Principle of Persecution hath been the cause of shedding *Seas of Blood in Christendom* this last thousand years: and (as I elsewhere shew) is more pernicious to civil Peace when Subjects rebel against their Prince under pretence of Religion, than when Princes punish their Subjects for their Differing Persuasions.

For we read of frequent Concessions and Grants of Liberty from Princes, but rarely of Submission in Subjects taking Arms for Defence of Religion, until the Country hath been near desolated:

desolated: therefore happy is that Kingdom, or State, where Prince and Subjects are united in one common bottom of *National Relation and Interest*, which no pretence of Religion can dissolve or perplex. History informs us of Christian Legians that fought under the Banners of their Pagan Princes to defend the Interest of their Prince and Country from Invasions. *vid the Life of Marcus Aurelius, &c.*

*Since Gods Word requires us not only to pray for but seek the Peace of the Country wherein we are Captives, that in their Peace we may have Peace; how much more our native Country, under the Regency of our native Prince, wherein we are Free-men?*

But with Papists, as I shewed before, no unquestionable Descent, nor legal Election, &c. can secure a Prince from the Rebellion of his Subjects, if Religion come in competition. And it is not only a Heresie in Civils, but in Religion, to maintain in any case, that Subjects may rebel against their lawful Prince to propagate Religion; against which there is as positive express Precepts in the Divine Law, as against any one Wickedness there forbidden, which is so well known to all that read the Scriptures, I need give no instances.

#### *Objection.*

If all Protestants were so persuaded, how came it the Hugonites of France, the Protestants of Germany, Belgia, Bohemia, &c. have maintained War with their lawful Princes for Religion.

#### *Answer.*

They that will please to read the History of those

those Wars, may observe Religion was not primarily the cause of those Wars, Civil Rights invaded by arbitrary Princes, contrary to their Oaths and the fundamental Constitutions of their Governments except those of Piedmont, whose Slaughters and Butcheries were so barbarous, and their Prince so obdurate, as to reject all ways of Pacification, which by all humble means, as Petitions, &c. they endeavoured, that they had no choice, but either to lye down under all the unjust Calumnies of their Popish Adversaries and suffer themselves, Wives and Children, &c. to be sacrificed to the Lust of inhumane Monsters, or flee to the Law of Nature and Necessity, to defend themselves as well as they could: and if this was ever the case of Papals under any Protestant Prince or State; their own Historians have not done them so much right as to mention it; and that it was as far from the case of the Irish Papists 1641. as it was possible for the Government to make it. *vide Sir John Temples History of the Irish Rebellion*, p. 16.

The Difference is no other but this, the Protestants in all humble manner supplicate their Princes they may enjoy the Liberty of their Conscience in matters of Worship, whilst they are loyal and obedient in all civil Subjection.

The Papists insolently impose upon their Princes to be of their Religion, and persecute all others on the pain of being destroyed themselves, if they refuse it; as is sufficiently manifested in Sects. 5. and 7.

And

And if this be the case, unjust and uncharitable are their Censures, who so frequently couple Papists and Protestant Dissenters as equally dangerous to the State; saith he that shall judge us all e're long, *Judge not, that ye be not judged, &c. Matth. 7. 1, 2.*

And as nothing in the power of mortals can secure them against Papal vengeance, so no vindictive Justice of the immortal God executed on these bloody Persecutors for their Cruelties will either convince or restrain them: many do we read of that dyed blaspheming, *vide Clarks Martyrologie*, but very few repenting. And very many of them have encreased their fury and rage by the Vengeance of God upon them, but very rare have the Judgments of God on some restrain'd their Survivors from proceeding in the same steps; which Stupidity is Gods brand of Reprobation upon them, as upon the Father of Murderers *Cain*.

Pope *Paul* the fourth, notwithstanding the ill success seven Popes his Predecessors had against the Emperor *Charles* the fifth, and the miseries not only *Rome* but all *Italy* sustaint by their perfidious Rebellions against that brave Prince: yet did he repeat all over again with Addition. Multitudes of instances might be given, both of Popes and tyrannical Princes: but take these:

That monster of Princes, for Treachery and Blood, *Charles* the ninth of *France*, soon after he had made *Paris*, &c. swim with the Blood of his innocent Subjects, breathed out his inhumane

Soul,

Soul, wallowing in his own Blood, *vid. M. Seres History of France* p. 809. yet would not this restrain his Successor *Henry* the third from treading in his steps, though his way was too rough to run his pace: for tho' he joyned not in that bloody Confederacy to extirpate all the Hereticks in *Europe*, called the Holy League, yet maintained a violent War against them, and obtained of the Pope to excommunicate the Prince of *Conde* and King of *Navarr*; yet after all was murdered by a Fryar in the midst of his Nobles, in the very same Room in which himself with that bloody Cabal agreed on that most barbarous Massacre of *Paris*, his last words to his Nobles were, *Learn of me, that Piety is a duty of man to God, over which worldly Force hath no power*: and in him was extinguished that bloody Race of the *Capets*. *vide Monsieur Seres History of France*, fol. 880.

Saith the Poet,

*Who'd trust in Greatness now, whose Food is Air,  
Whose Ruine sudden, and whose end despair?  
Who would presume upon his glorious Birth,  
Or quarrel for a spacious piece of Earth,  
That sees such Diadems become so cheap,  
And Heroes tumbling in a common heap?  
Oh! give me Vertue then, which sums up all,  
And firmly stands when Crowns and Scepters fall.*

## S E C T. VII.

*Gives Reasons why it is not only the Duty but the Interest of all the Papists of Ireland, to explode and reject these Jesuitical Principles above all the Papists in the world.*

I Knowing several that detest them, and being persuaded many others are of the same mind, both of the Clergy and principal persons of the Laity, as was manifested in the last Rebellion, and by the Witnesses against the late Primate and others in the last *Irish Plot*, and for the sakes of such unbloody Papists do I offer these things to their consideration, &c.

1. Because whilst they tolerate or indulge them, they will never be safe; as is asserted in Part. 2. pag. 73. all those miserable Desolations that have befallen them since *F. Allen* and *Parsons* were sent over to *Desmond* and *Tyrone* with consecrated Banners to encourage them to rebel, were the product of these Principles which operated to the ruine and utter desolating many Noble and Worshipful Catholick Families, besides multitudes of common people, *vid. Spencer, Campion, Sir John Davis, Sainbury, &c.*

2. If

2. If they would but consider the many traiterous Attempts that have been made against the Regency and Lives of their *English* Soveraigns since *Henry the Eighth* cast off the Popes Supremacy, they may easily guess what deep impressions of jealousy and dread that Nation from the Throne to the Plough retains of them; as for instance.

*Henry the Eighth* was excommunicated and deposed, the Kingdom interdicted and tendered to whomsoever could conquer it. The Pope in his Bull sent to *James King of Scotland*, declared him deprived of his Kingdom as an Heretick, a Schismatick, an Adulterer, a Murtherer, a sacrilegious person, and lastly a Rebel, and Convict of *Le se Magistratus*, for that he had risen against him the Pope who was his Lord. *vide. Speed l. 9 c. 21.*

*Innocent Edw. 6.* was filled with troubles from them, and strongly suspected to be poysoned by their Contrivance.

Their cruel Persecution by burning, &c. of five eminent pious Prelates, and one and twenty other eminent Divines, and many good people in their short Reign by *Queen Mary*.

The many Attempts made against the Life and State of that pious *Queen Elizabeth*, against her State in *England*, by that invincible Armado in 88. against her State of *Ireland* by invading it with an Army of *Spaniards* and *Italians* 1580. contriving to bring her Title in question, and raise up the Title of *Mary Queen of Scots* to the Crown of *England*.

## The Interest

Campion, Parsons and Haywood; the three first Jesuits that came for England, saith Sir Henry Baker, I wish they had been the last made it their business to hire Assassines to destroy the Queen.

Summervil to kill her 1582. the like Parry 1584. L. Luce Hist. 429, &c. Moody hired by the French Ambassador of the Guislin Faction to poyson her ann. Dom. 1592. Holt the Jesuit hired Patrick Coleman an Irish Fryar to kill the Queen, who of all Fryars love the work; after Dr. Lopez, Her Majesties Physician hired with 50000 Crowns to poyson her 1593. again ann. Dom. 1594. Willians and York, &c. conspired to fire her Navy: ann. Dom. 1595. Edward Squire, an Officer in her Stable, hired by Walpoole the Jesuit to poyson the Pummel of the Queens Saddle: after all this their Colledge at Salamanca sent over Winter the Jesuit with Instructions to raise an Army to make war against the Queen, who by the aid of fifty disguised Jesuits in England, listed 25000 Popish Souliers, Winter assuring them, the Jesuits of Spain had a Million of Crowns already collected for the Service, and many of the Catholick Princes engaged to aid and assist, but her God who had wonderfully preserved her all her long Reign, took her to himself, and so ended hers but not Englands troubles. Luc. Hist. pag. 405. to 509.

King James was designed to be destroyed the day of his Coronation. Luc. Hist. p. 509, 510. And his Title to the Crown rejected as being no Catholick and on that account Waterford, Limerick,

*Limerick, Kilkenny and Wexford, &c* openly opposed his Proclaiming, until forced by the Lord Deputy *Mountjoy*, after the several Attempts to rebel, as is hinted *Part. 1. p. 2, 3.*

But all these hellish Plots by Gods Mercy being frustrated, *Garnet, Catesby, Fawx, &c.* contrived to do their work throughly by the Powder Plot, *November 5. 1605.*

A Project not presidened in History for horrid Cruelty and hellish Treachery, to kill King, Queen, Prince, Lords and Commons at a Clap: and then to have charged it upon the Puritans, under which Character they would have destroyed the Body of the most stanch Protestants in the the Kingdom; and then who should oppose what they would have done? Yet Invincible Father *Garnet* was not discouraged, but was at other Devices, but was taken 1608. and executed, and so ceased plotting, *Luc. Histor. p. 513.* yet the King having further Evidence of their plotting his Destruction, published his Declaration, *June 1610.* to banish the Jesuits and Priests, *Luc. Hist. 513.*

Yet did they so swarm in *England*, that *Jo. Gee* a converted Priest (by the fall of the Mass-house at *Black Fryars*, where he narrowly escap'd his Life) in his Book called *the Foot out of the Snare*, printed in the year 1624. doth give an Account of a Congregation of Jesuits *de Propagando Fide*; and how some of them boasted they contrived the poysoning of King *James*, *vide Prynnes Royal Favorite* pag. 54. and *Romes Masterpiece* p. 34. yet in the Reign of *Charles*

the first they were still active; *anno Dom. 1627.* they kept their Colledge at Clerkenwell, and behaved themselves so insolently, the House of Commons petitioned the King to put the Laws in Execution against them, *Romes Masterpiece* pag. 34. and *Prynnes Introd.* p. 88, 89. they were the Fomentors of the Wars betwixt *England* and *Scotland* 1639. *Prynnes Compl. Hist.* fol 449, 450. and were preparing an Army to invade the South of *England*, whilst the King with his *English* strength was engaged against the *Scots* in the North; but the *Hollanders* fought and dispersed their Navy on the *English* Coast before they landed, *vide Prynnes Preface to his Vindication of Fundamentals Part 1.* but all Projects failing in *England*, they remembred the proverb,

*He that would *England* win  
Must with *Ireland* first begin.*

They managed their Consults for the *Irish* Massacre, *vid. Sir John Temples Preface to the History of the Irish Rebellion.* And at the same time plotted the poysoning of the King, discovered to Sir *William Boswel* the Kings Agent at the *Hague*, *vide Romes Masterpiece.*

And this General Rebellion and bloody Massacre, in *Ireland* did not only lay that Kingdom desolate, but also influenced *England* into that unnatural War that cost it so much precious Blood and Treasure; for until the news of that unsuspected amazing destruction of so many innocent Souls

in

in *Ireland*, there was not the least appearance of a breach betwixt the King and his Parliament, all things in *Scotland* were so well pacified by the Kings presence there, that when His Majesty upon advice of the *Irish* Rebellion suddenly hasted for *London*, it became a common speech amongst the *Scots*, *Never did a more contented King part with a more contented People*: and so far were the Parliament at *Westminster*, or the People from the least Jealousie of the King, that he was received into *London* with all imaginable expressions of Joy and Gladness.

But such an impression did the news of that horrid Massacre make, it begat a spirit of Indignation against the Papists, and such a dread of the like Miseries that might be perpetrated in *England* by them, moved the Parliament to desire of the King the Ordering the Militia, on pretence for the better security of the Nation against Papists, and speedier Suppression of the *Irish* Rebellion, upon which Head arose that woful Breach, on which that unnatural War with all its dismal consequences succeeded; from that time began the rude Turmuls of *London* Apprentices, &c. and all other misbehaviour; as you may read in *Scobels Collections of that years Transactions*. And on that occasion succeeded that Petition and large Remonstrance from the Parliament, presented to the King December. 14. 1641. which laid the foundation of all our succeeding Miseries: so that all *Englands*, *Scotlands* and *Irelands* Troubles, since *Henry the eighth* shak'd off the Papal Yoke, have

arose either from the Papists Struggles to recover their tyrannical Dominion over these Kingdoms, or the Divisions they have made amongst Protestants by their wily sleights.

And what their Plots have been against the Life of *Charles the second*, and the Peace of *England* of late, we are wearied with reading the Discoveries and Evidences in Print. I shall only insert their Oath of Secresie, which will serye for an Epitome of the whole Plot, at least the Design of it; and indeed it is the truest Explanation of all their former Oaths of Confederacy extant. In this the Monks Hood, is thrown by, of defending and maintaining His Majesties just Rights, &c.

They here clearly renounce and disown any Allegiance, and do swear to help his Holiness's Agents, &c. to extirpate and root out and destroy the said pretended King of *England*, &c.

*The Oath of Secrecy, given by William Rushton to me Robert Bolron, February 2. 1676.*

In the Name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost. Amen.

**I** Robert Bolron, being in the presence of Almighty God, the blessed Mary ever Virgin, the blessed Michael the Arch-Angel, the blessed St. John Baptist, the holy Apostles, St. Peter and St. Paul, and all the Saints in Heaven, and to you my Ghostly Father, do declare, and in my heart believe the Pope Christ's

Christis Vicar General to be the true and only Head of Christis Churh here on Earth, and that by vertue of the Keys of Binding and Loosing, given his Holiness by our Saviour Christ, he hath Power to depose all Heretical Kings and Princes, and cause them to be killed. Therefore to the utmost of my power, I will defend this Doctrine, and his Holinesses Rights, against all Usurpers whatever; especially against the now pretended King of England, in regard that he hath broke his Vows with his Holinesses Agents beyond Seas, and not performed his Promises in bringing into England the holy Roman Catholick Religion. I do renounce and disown any Allegiance as due to the said pretended King of England, or Obedience to any of his inferour Officers and Magistrates; but do believe the Protestant Doctrine to be Heretical and Damnable, and that all are damn'd which do not forsake the same; and to the best of my power will help his Holinesses Agents here in England, to extirpate and root out the said Protestant Doctrine, and to destroy the said pretended King of England, and all such of his Subjects as will not adhere to the holy See of Rome, and the Religion there professed. I further do promise and declare, that I will keep secret and private, and not divulge directly or indirectly, by Word, Writing, or Circumstance, whatever shall be proposed, given in charge, or discovered to me by you my Ghostly Father, or any other engaged in the promoting of this pious and holy Design; and that I will be active, and not desist from the carrying of it on: and that no hopes of Rewards, Threats, or Punishments shall make me discover the

rest

lest concerned in so pious a Work ; and if discovered, shall never confess any Accessaries with my self concerned in this Design. All which I do swear by the blessed Trinity, and by the blessed Sacraments, which I now purpose to receive, to perform, and on my part to keep inviolable : and do call all the Angels and Saints in Heaven, to witness my real intention to keep this Oath. In testimony whereof I do receive this most holy and blessed Sacrament of the Eucharist.

By this Oath it is evident Popelings are no Changelings, Hildebrands Principles commencing an. Dom. 606. are here repeated in their full strength above a thousand years after, and why these treasonable Plots and Principles were not since the time of this Oath effectually perpetrated is so notoriously manifest in the multitudes of Prints published on that occasion, it evidenceth it was not for want of good will on their parts.

And although God hath gratisly and wonderfully preserved the precious Life of the King, and in him the Lives of us all that value our Religion.

Yet have these Incendiaries not lost their labour, but have accomplished that which is next to cutting all our Throats, viz. the fomenting a Misunderstanding and Jealousie betwixt the most indulgent and compassionate Prince and his faithful and loyal Subjects.

A doleful consideration it is to all serious loyal Hearts, to observe a Prince so lately received with all expressible passions of Joy, not only by those that

that expected Gain and Advancement, but by others that knew they should suffer Loss as to their private Fortunes; yet were so weary of their past and then present Confusion, and so well satisfied in the Kings Gratiouſe Declarations and Intentions, they could and did say, as *Mephiboſheth to David, For as much as our Lord the King is come again in peace, let Zibah take all, let Royalists (but not Papists) take our Crown and Bishops Lands, our Regiments and Troops, &c. our Hearts shall joyn with our Hands, to lift the King into his Throne, (which we defie all other Hands to do without us) so England, &c. may be once more settled.*

And with what mutual content both King and People have enjoyed each other till the very day this last Hell-hatch'd Plot broke out is notorious to all Europe as well as *Great Britain and Ireland*, till then we heard of no Court nor Country Parties, no Whiggs nor Tories, &c. but in Irelands Boggs, &c. no Petitioners, Abhorrers, or Addressers, but what the King was pleased with, no executing penal Laws on Dissenters; but on the contrary, Subjects entirely and universally endear'd to a Prince, in his own nature, compounded of Tenderness and Sympathy, pleading with Parliaments against penal Statutes; and proposing to their Consideration, that some Provision might be made to enable him to dispence with such Protestants, who through misguided Conscience could not conform to the Ceremonies, Discipline, &c. of the Church, vid. *Speeches Octob. 26. 1662. and again Mar. 6. 1678.* His Majesty did not only press the House, but also com-

manded the Lord Chancellor to commend to their consideration, not only what might tend to preserve the Protestant Religion in general, but for an Union amongst all sorts of Protestants to distinguish between Popish and other Recusants, between them that would destroy the whole Flock and them that only wander from it, &c.

And though Parliaments were not then inclined to so great Moderation; yet hath His Majesty indulged Dissenters, and suspended the Execution of penal Statutes against them in a great measure, for these twenty years past; and more particularly hath govern'd this Kingdom by Lord Lieutenants, &c. that have imitated his Royal Clemency to the utmost Dissenters could expect, that they would shew themselves the most ungrateful, disingenious people in the world to be disloyal, or give the Government the least cause of Jealousie of them.

As I observed before, their Interest is as entirely involved in the Safety of the Crown and Potency of the English Protestant Interest, as the Conformists themselves, and they contentedly see them enjoy all Honours and beneficial Offices, either Civil, Ecclesiastical or Military, &c. under the Government, and chearfully perform their Duties in all troublesome and chargeable Services to their King and Country, and desire no greater Reward than that their Loyalty may not be suspected till they give cause.

And notwithstanding they may be dissatisfied with some things relating to the Hierarchy and Ceremonial part of the established Religion, yet not to that

that height, but they will allow there is a necessity of a National Religion, to prevent Atheism, &c. and if so, it follows, there is the like necessity of a National Constitution and Discipline to prevent Confusion; and until the Wisdom of the Nation in Parliament see cause to reform things some think ails, most Dislenters judge it their Interest as well as their Duty, to support the Protestant Church as now established against all illegal Opposition whatsoever, as the Bulwark of the Protestant Religion in *Ireland* against Popery and Confusion, &c.

There is not any thing the Conformists can design for the promotion of Godliness, which is the chief end of all Forms, but the sober Nonconformists heartily joyn with them; so that the pious Conformists and Nonconformists are both of the same true Religion, pertakers of the same Grace on earth, *Phil. 1. 7.* and Heirs of the same Glory in Heaven, *Rom. 8. 17.* And the impious of both sorts of one false Religion, pertakers of the same spirit of Formality and Hypocrisie on Earth, *2 Tim. 3.* and shall receive the same Condemnation, *Psal. 9. 17. John 5. 29.*

And if this hath been and is the case of the dissenting Protestants of *Ireland*, &c. can they be blamed for expressing a sense of their Damage and Danger by the Jesuited Papists their Neighbours, especially when sometimes from the Pulpit, and other times from the Bench, they are represented to be as dangerous persons as themselves, and that is dangerous enough, if it were true, and whatever their Protestant Neighbours apprehend of them,

their

their Popish will believe it ; because they proved the most dangerous Hereticks to them , from the year 1649 to 1653. that ever they met with in *Ireland*, (but I hope the Protestant Interest fares not the worse for that : ) and therefore would be as glad to see Bonefires made of them, as their Predecessors were of *Cranmer*, *Ridley* and *Latimer*, &c. being convinc'd, burning such surly stubborn Hereticks by three or four at a time is a more safe way than fighting them with the Kings Commission in their Pockets.

But from the whole I argue, it is the Interest of the Loyal moral Papists of *Ireland* above all the Papists in the world to disown and reject the Jesuits Principles expressed *Sect. 1.* from the consideration of these past woful consequences not only to the Protestants, but to the total ruine of multitudes of Noble & Worshipful Catholick Families, many of whom are utterly extinct, and others reduced to a very mean and contemptible state, to what their Ancestors enjoyed. And if so ;

Herberts  
Travels  
fol. 290.

*Why do the Windings of inconstant State  
Molest us Mortals, since the self same Fate  
Turns high and low ones with an equal doom,  
That Servants oft possess their Masters Room.  
Men are but Men, and be they strong or iwise,  
All their Design subject to Hazard lies.*

And if this hath been the issue of their former Struggles, can it be their Interest to hazard what is left by another desperate Attempt ? for (as I be-

fore

fore asserted) it must be an Have at all; another such Act as that of *Decimo septimo* would not leave a nocent Papist an Acre of Land in *Ireland*. And if these Jesuitical Principles, mentioned *Sect. 1.* be indulged, they are such a sort of Horse-leeches so greedy of Blood, as *Sect. 5.* and such Salamanders, whose natural Element is the fire of Contention, as *Sect. 4.* long Peace cannot be expected, *2 King. 9. 22.* and if no solid settled Peace in a Country, no Improvement of Trade, &c. as *Part 1. Chap. 1.*

And whilst these just causes of jealousies & fears remain upon the Spirits of the *English*, &c. there can be no true Friendship, nor comfortable Neighbourhood, which their Errors in Worship could not hinder, if their Principles in Morals were but safe.

And therefore I assert it their Interest above all the Papists in the world to explode these Jesuitical Principles, express'd *Part 2. pag. 93, 94.* and then, though we retain different Church Rites, yet may we firmly unite in one common State-Interest, as natural Subjects of the same King, governed by the same Laws, interested in the same common Peace and Safety of our native Country against all Invaders or intestine Disturbers whatsoever.

By this means the cares and perplexities of our common politick Father will be remov'd, to his great content, all prejudices and animosities betwixt Protestants and Papists will vanish, all Tories and other Robbers that discourage *English* Planters will be restrained, when the *Irish* are equally in danger, and consequently equally engaged to apprehend

## The Interest

hend and suppress them, all foreign Invaders will be discouraged, when they understand all Irelands Inhabitants, notwithstanding their different Religions, are united in the Interest of their King.

It is not to be expressed the manifold common Benefits that would accompany this Unity in Loyalty, which is the main Design of what is before declared in these seven Sections.

Saith the Poet;

*As he, who did against great Jove Rebel,  
Was struck with Thunder, and knock'd down to Hell :  
So God will all you Monsters overturn,  
Who'gainst the King, the Church, the State dare spurn,  
Your Glory shall be Shame, black Hell your Mansion,  
Furies your fellows, Brimstone and Fire your Pension :  
Your motions like Ægæons ; when he turns  
Ætna doth shake, and for a while it burns :  
But when you move, you shake the World asunder,  
Whose Bowels burn and roar till you be struck with  
(thunder.*

**F I N I S.**

